

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

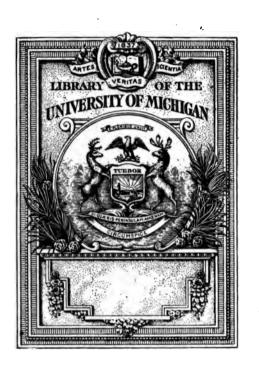
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

L.N. TOLSTOY THE PATHWAY OF LIFE

TEACHING LOVE AND WISDOM













L. N. TOLSTOY IN HIS STUDIO





LEO TOLSTOY

PATHWAY OF LIFE

TRANSLATED BY

ARCHIBALD J. WOLFE

PART II

NEW YORK

INTERNATIONAL BOOK PUBLISHING COMPANY

1919



COPYRIGHT, 1919



TO WOODROW WILSON—THE PEACEMAKER RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED

BY THE

PUBLISHERS





CONTENTS

VOL. II.

	PAGE
Effort	9
Living in the Present	23
Doing Good and Kindness	37
On Refraining	53
The Spoken Word	65
Thought	77
Self-Renunciation	93
Humility	115
Truthfulness	129
The Ills of Life	147
Death	165
After Death	185
Life is Blessedness	203
Doing His Will	223
The Teachings of Jesus	237





EFFORT



EFFORT

Sins, errors and superstitions obstruct a man's soul and hide it from himself. In order to reveal his soul to himself, man must make an effort of consciousness, and therefore in such efforts of consciousness is the principal task of a man's life.

I.

Deliverance From Sins, Errors and Superstition is in Effort

- 1. Self-renunciation delivers men from sins, humility from errors, truthfulness from superstitions. But in order to renounce the passions of the body, to humble himself before the errors of pride, and in order to examine in the light of reason the superstitions which enmesh him, man must make efforts. Only by efforts of his consciousness can man be delivered from sins, errors and superstitions which deprive him of happiness.
- 2. The Kingdom of God is taken by effort. The Kingdom of God is within you (Luke, XVI, 16; XVII, 21). These two sayings of the Gospel signify that only by effort of the consciousness within himself can man overcome the sins, errors and superstitions which would retard the coming of the Kingdom of God.
- 3. Here on earth there can be, there must be, no rest, because life is progress towards a goal that cannot be reached. Rest is immoral. I cannot say what this goal is. But whatever it be, we are moving toward it. Without this progress life would be folly and delusion. And we move toward this goal only by our own efforts.

Mazzini.



10

4. To become ever better herein is the whole concern of life, and one can become better only by effort.

We all know that we cannot achieve anything in the material world without effort. We must realize that likewise in the life of the soul—which is the paramount concern of life—nothing can be achieved without effort.

- 5. True strength is not in being able to tie a steel rod into a knot, nor in possessing boundless wealth, nor yet in ruling over millions of people—true strength is in having mastery over self.
- 6. Never think of a good deed: "it is not worth the trouble, it is so difficult that I shall be unable to accomplish it," nor "it is so easy, I can do it any time at my pleasure." Neither think nor speak in this manner: every effort, though its purpose be unattainable, though its purpose be ever so unimportant, every effort, we repeat, strengthens the soul.
- 7. Some think that in order to be a Christian we must perform peculiar and extraordinary deeds. This is not so. No such peculiar and extraordinary deeds are required of a Christian, but a constant effort of consciousness to rid the soul of sins, errors and superstitions.
- 8. Our evil deeds, the sources of our misfortunes, are easy to perform. But what is good and beneficial to us requires an effort.

 Buddhist wisdom.
- 9. If a man makes it his rule to do only what he pleases, he will not be pleased for long with what he is doing. Real tasks are those which require an effort to be accomplished.
- 10. The path to good knowledge never leads over velvety lawns strewn with blossoms: man must always make his way towards it over bare rocks.

 Ruskin.

11. The search for truth is not entered upon in a merry mood, but always with agitation and emotion; and still this search must go on, for if you do not find truth and learn to love it, you must perish. But, you might say, if truth cared to be found and loved by me, it would manifest itself to me. Truth does manifest itself to you, but you fail to see it. Seek it, truth wills it so.

Pascal.

TT.

It Requires Effort to Live for the Soul

- 1. I am an instrument with which God performs His work. My true happiness is to share in this work. I can share in this work only by those efforts of my consciousness which I make so as to keep in good order, clean, sharp and accurate the divine tool that has been intrusted to memyself, my soul.
- 2. The most precious thing for man is to be free, to live according to his own will and not according to that of another. In order to be so free, man must live for his soul. In order to live for his soul man must subdue the passions of his body.
- 3. The life of man is a gradual passing from the lower animal nature to an ever increasing consciousness of spiritual life.
- 4. We make an effort to awake and we wake up indeed when a dream becomes so horrible that we have no more strength to bear it. Even so with life when it becomes unbearable. At such times we must make mental efforts to awaken to a new, a superior spiritual life.
- 5. We must make efforts to overcome sins, errors and superstition; otherwise, as soon as we cease to battle against them, our body will attain mastery over us.
- 6. We imagine that real work must have something to do with things visible: building houses, plowing fields,



12

feeding the cattle, and that work on our soul, being something invisible, is of no importance, is something that we can do or let alone; whereas every other kind of work is trifling, save the work on your own soul, the work of daily growth in spirit and in love. This is the only true work, and all other work is useful only as long as this chief work of life is performed.

- 7. He who realizes that his life is bad and longs to lead a better life must not think that he cannot begin to live better until he has changed the circumstances of his life. Life can be and must be corrected not through external changes, but through a change within, a change in the soul. This can be done anywhere and at any time. And this is enough of a task for any man. Only when such a change enters your soul that you are unable to continue your former life, only then alter your mode of life, but not when you think that you could reform yourself more easily by changing your mode of life.
- 8. There is only one important life task for all people. This consists in improving your soul. This is the one task to which all men are called. Everything else is trifling in comparison. The truth of this is evidenced by the fact that it is the one task in which you can engage without hindrance, and that it is the one task which always yields joy to man.
- 9. Take a silk worm for a pattern. He toils until he has strength to fly. You are clinging to earth. Toil over your soul and you will receive wings.

 Angelus.

III.

The Striving After Perfection Requires Mental Effort

1. "Be ye perfect, even as your Heavenly Father is perfect," says the Gospel. This does not signify that Christ

commands man to be as perfect as God, but that every man must make efforts of mind to strive after perfection, and in this striving is the life of man.

2. Every creature grows up gradually and not all at once. A science can not be mastered all at once. Neither can sin be overcome all at once. There is only one way to grow better: by wise judgment and constant patient effort.

Channing.

- 3. Lessing said that it is not the truth which gives joy, but the effort which a man must make in order to attain it. The same may be said of virtue: the joy of virtue is in the efforts made to attain it.
- 4. The following admonition is engraved on the bathtub of Emperor Ching-Chang: "Daily renew thyself completely; do so again and again from the beginning."

Chinese wisdom.

5. If a man is not engaged in research, or if he is engaged in research and fails therein, let him not despair or cease; if a man does not question enlightened persons regarding doubtful matters, or questioning them fails to attain enlightenment himself, let him not despair; if a man does not meditate, or meditating fails to comprehend clearly the essence of good, let him not despair; if a man does not distinguish good from evil, or in distinguishing lacks a clear conception, let him not despair; if a man does not perform good deeds, or in performing them does not devote his whole strength to them, let him not despair; whatever others have accomplished with one bound, he may be able to accomplished after a hundred trials, he may be able to accomplish after a thousand.

He who truly shall follow this rule of constant effort,



no matter how ignorant he be, will attain enlightenment; no matter how weak he be, he will attain strength; no matter how depraved he be, he will surely acquire virtue.

Chinese wisdom.

- 6. If a man performs good deeds merely because he has acquired the habit of doing good, his is not yet the truly good life. Good life commences when man makes efforts in order to be good.
- 7. You say that it is not worth while to make efforts, for, strive as you may, you can never attain perfection. But your business is not in attaining perfection, it is in the constant striving after it.
- 8. Let not man think lightly of evil in his heart: "I am so far from evil that it can not touch me." Little drops fill a vessel with water. Little by little the madman who does evil deeds is filled with evil.

Let not man think lightly of goodness, saying in his heart: "I have no strength to receive goodness." As the vessel is filled drop by drop, even so the heart of the man who performs good deeds is filled with goodness as he strives towards blessedness.

Buddhist wisdom.

9. To make life continuous joy instead of sorrow be always good to all, men and animals alike. In order to be always good, you must train yourself to be good. In order to train yourself to be good, you must not commit a single unkind action without reproving yourself.

If you do this, you will soon acquire the habit of being kind to all, men and animals alike. And if you become accustomed to kindness, joy will ever reign in your heart.

10. The virtue of man is not measured by prodigious feats, but by his daily effort,

Pascal.

14

IV.

In Striving After Perfection Man Must Rely on His Own Strength Alone

- 1. What a mistake to ask God or even people to rescue us out of an undesirable condition. Man requires no one's help, nor need he be rescued out of any condition, he has need of one thing only: to make an effort of his own mind in order to free himself from sins, errors and superstitions. Only to the extent that a man delivers himself from sins, errors and superstitions, can his condition change or improve.
- 2. Nothing so weakens the strength of a man as the hope of finding salvation and happiness in anything outside of his own efforts.
- 3. We must rid ourselves of the idea that Heaven can correct our errors. If you prepare food carelessly you do not expect that Providence will intervene to make it tasty; even so if after a series of senseless actions you have misdirected the course of life, you must not think that divine intervention will set everything right.

 Ruskin.
- 4. There is within you the knowledge of what constitutes supreme perfection. There are likewise within your own self obstacles to its attainment. Your condition is what you must work over in order to approach perfection.

 Carlyle.
- 5. You sin yourself, you encompass evil yourself, you flee from sin yourself, you purify your thoughts yourself, you are evil or you are pure in your own self—another can not save you.

 Jampada.
- 6. To say that I cannot refrain from an evil deed is to say that I am not a man but an animal. Men often think

so, but no matter how strongly they may affirm this, they know within their own hearts that as long as they have life they can cease from evil and commence to do good.

7. There is no moral law if I cannot obey it. Some say we are born selfish, covetous, lustful and we cannot be otherwise. Yes we can. First we must feel in our hearts what we are and what we should be, and then we must make an effort to strive towards that which we ought to be.

Voltaire.

8. Man must develop his good inclinations. Providence did not implant them in man fully developed; they are embryonic. To make himself better, to improve himself by labor, therein is the principal task of a man's life.

Kant.

V.

There is Only One Way to Improve the Life of Human Society—by the Individual Efforts of Men Striving After a Righteous and Moral Life

- 1. Men draw nearer to the Kingdom of God, that is to a righteous and blessed existence, only through the efforts of each individual striving to live a righteous life.
- 2. If you see that the social order is evil and you would improve it, know that there is only one way to accomplish it, and that is for all people to become better. And in order that all people may become better, there is only one means in your power: to become better yourself.
- 3. We frequently hear men argue that all efforts to improve life, to eradicate evil, to enthrone righteousness are fruitless, that all these things come about of their own accord. Men travel in a boat, the rowers go ashore, but those remaining on board fail to take up the oars and to row and imagine that the boat will move as before.

4. "Yes, very true, if only everybody understood it and realized that it is evil and unnecessary," thus argue some people on the subject of human ills. "Suppose one man cease from evil, refusing to participate in it, what will this amount to in the life of all people? Improvements in human life are brought about by the concerted action of the whole society and not by individual effort."

True enough, one swallow does not make springtime. But just because one swallow does not make springtime, should that one swallow that senses the spring refrain from flying, sit still and wait? If every bud, every blade of grass did so, springtime would never come. Even so in the coming of the Kingdom of God I must not stop to think whether I am the first or the one thousandth swallow, but sensing the coming of the Kingdom of God, I must right now, though I be alone, do all I can towards its realization.

"Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you:

For everyone that asketh, receiveth; and he that seeketh, findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened."

Matthew VII, 7-8.

5. "I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled?"

Luke XII, 49.

And why is this fire so slowly kindled? If so many centuries could pass and Christianity still has failed to alter the social order of life, how dare we think that these things come about of their own accord? The majority of people, though led to recognize the imperative truth of Christianity, still refrain from making this truth the basis of their actions. Why? Because people await a change from external conditions and refuse to comprehend that

this change is attained by the efforts of each individual in his own soul and not by any external mutations.

6. Our life is evil, why?

18

Because men lead evil lives. And men lead evil lives because they are evil themselves. Therefore, in order to stop life from being evil, we must transform evil men into good men. How can we do this? No one can change all others, but every one can change himself. At first, it would seem, this will not mend matters. What is one man against all others? But everybody complains that life is evil. And if everybody realizes that the evil of life is due to people being evil, and that no one can change all others, but everybody can change himself, and transform himself into a good man out of an evil man, and everybody begins to correct himself, then immediately all lives will improve.

Therefore it is our fault that life is evil, and it depends on us to make it good.

VI.

The Effort of Striving After Perfection Yields True Happiness to Man

- 1. Moral effort and the joy of the consciousness of life follow one another as the joy of rest follows the weariness of physical labor. Without physical labor there can be no joy of resting; without moral effort there can be no joy of the consciousness of life.
- 2. The reward of virtue is in the very effort of a good action.

 Cicero.
- 3. Man would cry out with pain if while refraining from labor he suddenly experienced the muscular ache which is the effect of manual toil. Even so the man who is a stranger to spiritual labor with his inner self experi-

ences an agonizing pain from vicissitudes which are borne unflincingly by him who sees the chief task of life in the effort of delivering himself from sins, errors and superstitions, that is in striving after moral perfection.

- 4. Look for no speedy or visible success from your strivings after good. You will not see the fruit of your efforts, for to the extent that you have advanced, so has also advanced the ideal of perfection after which you are striving. The effort of the mind is not a means for attaining a blessing, but the effort of the mind in itself is a blessing.
- 5. God gave to animals all that they need, but He did not give to man all that he needs; man must attain himself all that he needs. The highest wisdom of man was not born within him; he must labor to attain it, and the greater his labor, the greater his reward.

 Babidic tables.
- 6. The Kingdom of God is taken by force. This means that in order to be delivered from evil and to become good, we require effort.

Effort is needed to refrain from evil. Refrain from evil and you will do good because the soul of man loves that which is good, and will do good if it be free from evil.

7. You are free agents, you feel that it is so. All specious arguments that fate or a law of nature, dominates all things, will never silence the two incorruptible witnesses of human freedom: the reproaches of the conscience and the majesty of martyrdom. Beginning with Socrates and down to Christ, and beginning with Christ down to those martyrs of all times who from generation to generation have died for the truth, all martyrs of the faith prove the error of this doctrine of slaves, loudly proclaiming: "We too have loved life and loved those dear ones who made our life worth while and who implored us to give up our



20

fight. Every heart-beat loudly appealed to us—live! and yet in obedience to the law of life we preferred death!"

And beginning with Cain, down to the meanest wretch of our own day, all those who have chosen the path of evil hear in the depths of their heart the voice of condemnation and of reproach, the voice that gives them no rest, which constantly asks: "Why did you turn from the path of goodness? You could, you can make an effort. You are free agents. It is within your power to remain steeped in sins or be delivered from them."

Mazzini.



LIVING IN THE PRESENT



LIVING IN THE PRESENT

People imagine that the course of their life is in time in the past or in the future. But this is a delusion: the true life of men is not in time, but always IS in that timeless spot where the past and the future meet and which we inexactly call the present time.

In this timeless point of the present, and therein alone, man is free, and therefore the true life of man is in the present, and in the present alone.

The True Life is in the Present

- 1. The past is no more, the future has not yet come. What is then? Only that point where the past and the future meet. This is seemingly nothing, yet in that point is the whole of our life.
- 2. We only imagine that there is time. Time is not. Time is merely a device by means of which we gradually see that which is in reality and which is ever the same. The eye does not see all of a globe at once, yet the globe exists all at once. In order that the eye may see the entire globe, the latter must be turned before the observing eye. Even the world revolves before the eyes of men in time. For the supreme reason there is no time: that which will be, is. Time and space is the disintegration of the infinite for the convenience of finite creatures.
- 3. There is no before nor after. That which will happen to-morrow already really exists in eternity.

Angelus.

4. There is neither time nor space: both are necessary to us only for the understanding of things. And therefore it is an error to think that speculations regarding stars

whose light has not yet reached us or regarding the state of the sun for millions of years are of any consequence. There is nothing important, nothing worth while in such speculations. All these things are idle mental diversions.

5. If life is something beyond time, why is it manifested in time and space? Because it is only in time and space that there can be motion, that is striving towards expansion, illumination, perfection. If there were no space or time, there would be no motion, and therefore no life.

II.

The Spiritual Life of Man is Beyond Time and Space

- 1. Time exists for the physical life alone. But the spiritual being of man is beyond time. It is beyond time because the activity of the spiritual being of man is only in efforts of the mind. But the effort of the mind is always beyond time, for it is always in the present, and the present is not in time.
- 2. We cannot picture to ourselves a life after death, nor can we remember a life before birth, because we cannot picture to ourselves anything that is beyond time. Yet we know best of all our life beyond time—namely our present life.
- 3. Our soul is thrown into our body where it finds numbers, time and space. Meditating upon these things it calls them nature or necessity, and indeed it cannot think otherwise.

 Pascal.
- 4. We say that time is passing. This is wrong. We are passing and not time. As we sail on a river it seems to us as though the shores of the river were moving instead of our boat. Even so it is with time.
 - 5. It is well to remember frequently that our true life

is not the outward physical life which we live here on earth, before our eyes, but that alongside of this life there is within us another life, an inner and spiritual life which has no beginning and no end.

III.

True Life is Only in the Present

- 1. The ability to remember the past and to imagine the future is given us only in order to enable us, guided by this or that consideration, to decide more correctly our actions in the present, and not to regret the past or build for the future.
- 2. Man lives only in the present instant. Everything else is either gone or is uncertain of occurring.

Marcus Aurelius.

- 3. We worry over the past and spoil our future merely because we pay too little attention to the present. The past is gone, the future is not yet, only the present exists.
- 4. Our future state will always seem a dream of our present state.

Not the length of life, but its depth is of consequence. The important thing is not the duration of life, but how to live beyond time. And we live beyond time only by an effort towards righteousness. If we live in this manner we raise no question of time.

Emerson.

5. "Live for a day—live for an age"—the meaning of this adage is to live as though any moment you await the last hour of your life, and have time to attend only to the most important matters, and at the same time so to live as though you could continue to do without end that which you are doing.

26

- 6. Time is back of us, time is ahead of us, but it is not with us. If you dwell on that which had been or on that which will be you will lose sight of the most important thing: living in the present.
- 7. "A moment is only a moment," man so lightly regards the moment as to let it slip, and yet his whole life is solely in that moment, only in the moment of the present can we make that effort which will take the Kingdom of God by force both within us and beyond us.
- 8. Not to-morrow, but to-day alone can you overcome evil habits.

 Confucius.
- 9. Nothing is of consequence excepting that which we are doing in the present moment.
- 10. It is well not to give thought to the morrow. To avoid doing so there is only one means: to think unceasingly whether I am fulfilling the task of the present day, hour and moment.
- 11. When associating with others or when carried away by the thoughts of the past or of the future, it is difficult to realize that your life is right now, in the present moment. But how important and precious it is to remember this. Try to train yourself to do so. Man will avoid much evil if he but train himself to remember that only the present is important in life, that the present alone exists. All else is a dream.
- 12. The moment you delve in the past or in the future you have left the present life, and you feel orphaned, hampered and lonely.
- 13. "How much moral suffering—and all that to die after a few moments. Is it worth while to worry?"

This is untrue. Your life is now. There is no time, the present moment is worth many centuries if in this present moment you live with God.

Amiel.

- 14. They say man is not free because everything he does has its own cause preceding it in time. But man always acts in the present, and the present is beyond time, it is merely the point of contact between the past and the future. Therefore in the moment of the present man is always free.
- 15. The divine force of life manifests itself only in the present; therefore the activities of the present must have divine characteristics, that is, must be rational and good.
- 16. A wise man was asked: what is the most important thing? Who is the most important man? And what time of life is the most important?

And the wise man replied: The most important thing in life is to love all people, for therein is the concern of every man's life.

"The most important man is the one with whom you have dealings at the present moment, for you cannot know whether you will ever have dealings with any one else.

"But the most important time is the present, for in that alone a man has power over himself."

IV.

Love is Manifested in the Present Only

- 1. The paramount thing in life is love. And you cannot love in the past or in the future. You can love only in the present, now, this instant.
- 2. Only when you are not guided in your actions by the past or by the future, but by the commands of your soul in the present, can you act in full harmony with love.
- 3. Love is the manifestation of the divine principle for which there can be no time, and therefore love manifests itself only in the present, now, this instant.

- 4. Do not think of the future, but endeavor right now to make life joyful to yourself and to others. "Let the morrow take care of itself." This is a great truth. It makes life worth while not to know what is needful for the future. Only one thing is surely needful and is always worth while—to love others at the present moment.
- 5. To love in general means to do good. This is how we all understand love and cannot understand it otherwise.

And love is not a mere word, but that which we do for the good of others.

If a man decides that he must abstain from the demands of the slightest love manifestation in the present for the sake of some greater love in the future, he only deceives himself and others and loves no one but himself.

There is no love in the future, love can be only in the present. If a man does not do the works of love in the present, there is no love in him.

- 6. You seek that which is good. But that which is good can be only now. There can be no good in the future, for there is no future. There is only the present.
- 7. Never postpone a good deed if you can do it today, for death cannot stop to examine whether you have or have not done what you ought. Death waits for no man, waits for nothing. Therefore the most important thing for man is that which he is doing at the present moment.
- 8. If we only remembered more frequently that lost time cannot be returned, that evil once committed cannot be undone, we would do more good and commit less evil.
- 9. Do not let us delay being just and compassionate. Do not let us wait for some extraordinary suffering—either our own or that of other people. Life is short, let us therefore make haste to rejoice the hearts of our com-

panions on this short journey. Let us make haste to be good.

Amiel.

- 10. If you can do a good deed or show love to someone take heed to do so at once, otherwise the opportunity may pass never to return
- 11. Good men forget the good they have done; they are so busy about that which they do at the present moment that they can give no thought to what they did in the past.

 Chinese proverb.
- 12. Life now, at the present moment, this is the state in which God dwells within us. And therefore the present moment is the most precious of all. Make use of all the forces of your soul so that this moment pass not in vain, so that you may not miss God who can be manifested in you.

V.

The Error of Preparing for Life Instead of Living It

1. "I may depart for a season from the things which my conscience demands of me, because I am not quite ready," says one. "But I will get ready when the time comes and will then live in perfe t accord with the dictates of my conscience."

The error of such reasoning is in the fact that the man departs from the life in the present, which is the only real life, and puts it off to some future, whereas the future does not belong to him.

In order not to fall into this error man must remember and realize that he has no time to make preparations, that he must lead the best life he can right now, just as he is, that the only improvement he needs is improvement in love, and this improvement is effected only in the present. Therefore, without putting things off, man must live every moment endeavoring with all his might to fulfill that calling for which he came into the world and which alone can give him true happiness. Man must live thus because he knows that any moment he may be deprived of the possibility of the fulfillment of that calling.

2. "I will do this when I grow up." "I will live so when I finish college, or when I get married." "And I will do so when I raise children, or marry off my son, or when I acquire wealth, when I move to another city, or when I reach old age."

Thus speak children, adults and old people, yet no man knows whether he will survive until evening. We cannot know about any of these things whether we succeed in accomplishing them or not, as death may interfere.

Death cannot interfere with one thing only; death cannot prevent us from fulfilling the will of God at any moment of our life—and that is to love all people.

- 3. We frequently think and say that we cannot do all the things which we ought to do because of the condition in which we now find ourselves. How unfair this is. That inner labor wherein consists life is always possible. You are in prison, you are ill, you are restrained from any kind of outward activity, you are humiliated, tortured—but your inner life is in your power. In your thoughts you can reproach, condemn, envy, hate, or on the other hand still in your thoughts you can crush all these feelings and replace them with good feelings. Thus every moment of your life is yours, nor can anyone take it away from you.
- 4. When I say: "I cannot do so" I use a wrong expression. I should say: "Formerly I could not do so." I know full well that at any instant in the present I can do

with myself what I will. And it is well for man to know this.

- 5. The consciousness of illness, worry about curing it, and particularly this thought: "I am ill now and cannot, but when I recover I will do so and so"—this is a great error. It is like saying: I do not want that which is given me, I desire that which I have not. We can always rejoice in what we have now, and we can always do all possible things through that which is—that is through the forces which we have.
- 6. Every present hour is a critical and decisive hour. Note in your heart that every day is the best day of the year, every hour the best hour, every instant the best instant. The best, because it is the only one you have.

Emerson.

- 7. In order to live your life in the best manner possible, you must remember that all of your life is in the present and endeavor to act in the best way possible every present instant.
- 8. It is not well with you, and you imagine that it is because you cannot live as you would, and that you could more easily accomplish the things you ought if your life had been cast differently. This is wrong. You have all that you so much desire. Every instant you can do the very best that is possible to you.
- 9. In life, in real life there can be nothing better than what is. To wish for anything better than what is is blasphemy.
- 10. Important deeds, great deeds, deeds which can be finished in the future only are not truly deeds performed for God. If you believe in God you will believe in living in the present, and you will do the things that are completed in the present.

32

- 11. The closest approach to God is the greatest concentration on the present, and on the contrary the more you are taken up with the past or the future, the further you get away from God.
- 12. Memento mori, remember death! This is a great saying. If we only bore in mind that we should inevitably die and that very soon, our life would be entirely different. If a man knows that he will die inside of thirty minutes, he will not do anything trifling or foolish in these last thirty minutes, surely not anything evil. But is the half century or so that separates you from death essentially different from a half hour?

VI.

The Consequences of Our Acts are God's Business, Not Ours

- 1. All the consequences of our acts cannot ever be subject to us, because all the consequences of our acts are infinite in an infinite world and time.
- 2. If you can see all the consequences of your activity know thereby that your activity is trifling.
- 3. People say we cannot live if we do not know what awaits us. We must prepare ourselves for that which will be. This is wrong. The genuinely good life is when we take no concern in what will happen to our body, but in what we now need for our soul. And we need for our soul but one thing: to do that which brings our soul into union with all people and with God.
- 4. Our present acts this instant, now, are our own, but what will become of them, that is God's business.

St. Francis d'Assisi.

5. When living the life of the spirit, that is in harmony with God, man may not know the consequences of his

acts, but he will assuredly know that these consequences will be blessed.

- 6. An act performed without any speculations as to its consequences, and solely in obedience to the will of God is the best act that a man can perform.
- 7. When you give thought to the consequences of your activity you feel your weakness and nothingness. But the moment you realize that your business is now to do the will of Him who sent you here, you feel free, joyful and strong.
- 8. If a man gives thought to what will come of what he is doing, he is surely doing something for his own self.
- 9. The reward of a good life is nowise in the future, it is in the present. Do well now, and it will now be well with you. And if you do good works, the consequences cannot be otherwise but good.

VII.

Men Realizing the Meaning of Life in the Present Do Not Concern Themselves with the Problem of Life After Death

- 1. Thoughts of a future life confuse us. We ask ourselves what will be after death? But we cannot ask this; we cannot ask this because life and future are contradictory terms; life can be in the present only. It seems to us that life was and will be, but life only is. It is not for us to decide the problems of the future, but how to live now, in the present.
- 2. We are always in ignorance of the physical life, because the physical life has its entire course in time, and we cannot know the future. But in the domain of the spiritual there is no future. Thus the uncertainty of our life diminishes to the extent that our life passes from the



34

physical to the spiritual, to the extent that we live in the present.

3. We must honestly and scrupulously perform the task set before us, no matter whether we hope some day to be angels or believe that we once were molluscs.

Ruskin.

- 4. The principal problem of our life is whether in the brief span of life granted us we do the will of Him who sent us into life. Are we doing it?
- 5. In the course of life, particularly in the course of a good life, the importance of time and the interest in the future gradually fade away. The older we become, the more quickly the time passes, and the less importance is attached to what will be, but increasingly more to that which is.
- 6. If you can soar in spirit above space and time you find yourself every moment in eternity.

 Angelus.



DOING GOOD AND KINDNESS



I.

To render Good for evil is more natural, agreeable and rational than to render evil for evil.

1. And when they came to the place called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

Then said Jesus, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do." And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

Luke XXIII, 33-34.

2. No one has ever wearied of obtaining for himself all kinds of blessings. But the greatest blessing which a man could obtain for himself is to act in harmony with his reason, and this law commands him to do good to others unceasingly as the highest blessings attainable.

Marcus Aurelius.

- 3. Render good for evil.
- 4. How to take revenge on your enemy? Try to do him as much good as you can.
- 5. Overcome wrath with meekness, evil with good, miserliness with gifts, falsehoods with truth.

Giampada.

6. Treating our neighbors as they deserve, we only make them worse. But treating them as though they were better than they really are we force them to become better.

Goethe.

7. Render good for evil, and you destroy all the pleasure in the evil man which he derives from his evil doing.

He who but once has experienced the pleasure of ren-

38

dering good for evil will never miss an opportunity of experiencing this joy.

TT.

In Order to Believe in That Which is Good, It is Necessary to Commence to Do Good

- 1. Adorn each passing day with a kindly deed.
- 2. It is best of all to commence a day like this; think on awaking whether you cannot give pleasure this day, though it be to only one person.

 Nietzsche.
- 3. Kindness is our duty. He who frequently fulfills this duty and sees how his good intentions are materialized will ultimately really love him to whom he has been kind. The words "love thy neighbor as thyself" do not mean that you must first love him, and then, as the result of your love, do good unto him. No, you must do good to your neighbor, and your kindness will kindle the love of humanity in your heart, which will be the result of your readiness to do good.

 Kant.
- 4. Good will is not good because of that which it effects or accomplishes, not because of its usefulness in attaining some determined aim, but solely because of its volition, that is strictly per se: considered by itself, without any comparison, it has a far higher value than anything that could be accomplished by it in favor of any inclination, if you will in favor of all inclinations taken together. If through some adversity of fate, or by reason of too scant an equipment of abilities allotted by a stepmotherly nature, such goodwill were utterly deprived of the possibility of realzing its intentions, if in spite of its greatest effort it achieved nothing, but just remained merely goodwill (of course, not the mere bare desire on

our part, but with the employment of every means within our power), even in this case it would sparkle of itself as a precious diamond—something that contains its fullest value in itself.

Kant

- 5.. What shall it profit him who lives a virtuous domestic life if he withdraws into a desert? Among all those who work for future bliss, he will gain most of all who lives well with his family.

 Hindu wisdom.
- 6. No one can have any idea of what is good until he begins to do good. Nor can anyone truly love that which is good until he learns to do it frequently and at a sacrifice. Nor can anyone find peace in doing good until he does it constantly.

 Martineau.
- 7. If you can not train yourself to seek out opportunities for doing good, even as a huntsman pursues his prey, at least do not omit an opportunity to do good.

III.

The doing of good cannot be measured either by the need of the recipient or by the sacrifice of the giver, but merely by that communion in God which is established between the recipient and the giver.

- 1. Life is not always a blessing. Only good life is a blessing.
- 2. Nature has so arranged it that offences are remembered longer than good actions. The good is forgotten, but offences stubbornly persist in memory.
- 3. It is not virtue, but a spurious counterfeit and imitation of it, if we are led to do our duty by the promise of a reward.

 Cicero.

40

A wise man questioned the spirit of wisdom how to attain bodily well-being and happiness without imperiling the soul, and how to save the soul without imperiling the body.

The spirit replied: Do not slander, lest slander and backbiting fall back upon yourself, for it is said that every other evil spirit attacks face to face, but slander alone attacks from the rear.

Do not yield to wrath, because the man who has yielded to wrath forgets his obligations and omits to do good.

Beware of timidity, for the timid loses the pleasures of the world and of the soul and destroys both the body and the soul.

Beware of lustfulness, for the fruits of it are disease and remorse. Hold no envy in your heart, lest you poison your life. Do not commit sin out of a feeling of shame.

Be industrious and taciturn, live by your daily earnings and save for others and for God. This practice will be the most worthy manifestation of your activities.

Do not steal the goods of others, nor neglect your own work, for it is said that he who compels others to feed him is a man-eater.

Do not enter into an argument with a man of cunning, but rather leave him entirely alone.

Do not enter into partnership with a man of greed, nor trust his leadership.

Do not associate with the ignorant. Do not enter into explanations before fools, take no money from an evildoer, nor enter the king's palace in the company of slanderer.

Oriental wisdom.

5. When the question is asked what is really that pure morality, the touchstone by which we must test the moral purport of our every act, I am constrained to confess that only philosophers could make the solution of this question

a matter of doubt, for sound human reason considers this question definitely settled a long time back, not in abstract and generalizing formulas, it is true, but by differentiating the accomplished acts which we differentiate as positively as we distinguish our right hand from our left. Kant.

6. Do good to your friends so that they may love you still more; do good to your enemies so that they may some day become your friends.

When you speak of your enemy, remember there may come a day when he will become your friend. Cleobulos.

- 7. All men more or less closely approach one of the two opposite boundaries: life for self alone, and life for God alone.
- 8. Know firmly and feel profoundly that you must devote each day of your life to the welfare of others, doing for them all that you can. Doing it, not talking about it.

 Ruskin.
- 9. To follow one good deed with another so that there be no interspace between them, this is what I call a happy life.

 Marcus Aurelius.
- 10. The more a man gives to others, and the less he demands for himself, the better he is. The less he gives to others and the more he demands for himself, the worse he is.
- 11. If you have done wrong to your neighbor, though the wrong be trifling, regard it as great; and if you have done good to your neighbor, though this good be great, regard it as trifling; but even a slight good done to you regard as great.

The blessing of God will descend on him who gives to the poor; a double blessing will rest upon him who in giving to the poor receives them and lets them depart with kindness.

12. When doing good, be grateful for being able to do it.

True good is done by us only when we do it without noticing it; when we come out of our own self in order to live in others.

IV.

Goodness Overcomes All Things, But is Insuperable Itself

- 1. All things can be resisted, excepting goodness alone.
- 2. Not the condemnation of evil, but the elevation of good is the means of establishing harmony in the life of the individual and of the world. An improperly disposed man condemns evil, but this condemnation is in itself the worst of evils, as it merely aids its growth, while paying no attention to it, but caring for that which is good will lead to the destruction of evil.

 Lucy Mallory.
- 3. He who loves to exert his mind in order to search out the law of his duty is close to the science of morality.

He who endeavors to do his duty is close to the love of humanity, that is to the desire to do good to all people.

He who blushes for his inefficiency in doing his duty is close to that strength of soul which is necessary to the proper fulfilment of duty.

Chinese wisdom.

- 4. Morality cannot be independent of religion, for it is not only one of the effects of religion, that is of that relationship of man to the world of which he is conscious, but is already included in that relationship.
 - 5. If there is a motive back of a good deed it is no

longer good, any more than if it has a reward as an effect. Good is beyond the chain of cause and effect.

- 6. Even as torches and fireworks pale and fade from sight in the radiance of the sun, so wisdom and even genius as well as beauty pale and fade before the goodness of heart.

 Schopenhauer.
- 7. Infinite tenderness is the greatest gift and possession of all truly great.

 Ruskin.
- 8. The tenderest plants break their way through the toughest soil and through rocky fissures. Even so goodness. What wedge, what hammer, what battering ram can compare with the force of a good and sincere man? Nothing can resist it.

 Thoreau.
- 9. Where there is a man there is an opportunity to do him good.

 Seneca.

To answer an evil word with a good one, to render favor in return for an injury, to turn the other cheek when your cheek is struck, this is the only means of taming malice.

V.

Kindness in Relations Between Men is Obligatory. If You are Not Good to a Man, You are Evil and Provoke Illwill in Him

- 1. Be not hard of heart towards him who is subjected to temptation, but try to comfort him even as you would desire to be comforted.
- 2. Do not put off until to-morrow what you can do today. Do not compel another to do that which you can do yourself. Pride costs more than all things needed for food, drink, shelter and raiment taken together.



- 3. To have done too little is rarely a cause for regret. What a lot of trouble do we go through on account of things that never happen, merely worrying that they might happen. If angry count ten; if very angry count up to one hundred.

 Jefferson.
- 4. Despise no man, stifle in your heart all presumptuous judgment and insulting suspicions against your neighbor, strive to account for the actions and for the words of others with a guileless heart. Give others preference before yourself in all sincerity.

Goodness beautifies life and solves its contradictions, it clears up that which is perplexing, renders easy that which is difficult and turns gloom into joy.

VI

Goodness is to the Soul What Health is to the Body; If You Possess It You Do Not Notice It, and It Gives You Success in Every Undertaking

1. People of highest virtue do not account themselves virtuous, and that is why they are virtuous. People of minor virtuous attainments never forget their virtues, and that is why they are not virtuous. Highest virtue does not assert itself nor proclaim itself. Virtue of lowest order asserts and proclaims itself.

Kindheartedness of the highest order acts, but does not try to proclaim itself. Kindheartedness of the lowest order asserts itself and tries to proclaim itself.

Justice of the highest order acts, but does not try to proclaim itself. Justice of the lowest order acts and tries to proclaim itself.

Propriety of the highest order acts but does not try to proclaim itself. Propriety of the lowest order acts, but when it fails to evoke a response, it enforces obedience to its dictates.

Thus when virtue of the highest order is lost, kindheartedness supplants it; when kindheartedness is lost, justice supplants it; but when justice is lost propriety supplants it.

The rules of propriety are only the semblance of truth and the origin of all disorder. Wit is a blossom of reason, but the origin of ignorance.

For this reason the man of holy life clings to the fruit and not to the blossom, he rejects the latter and clings to the former.

Lao-Tse.

- 2. The man of highest virtues strives to walk upon the path of rectitude to the end. To go half-way and weaken, this is the thing to be afraid of.

 Chinese wisdom.
- 3. Virtue in man must have the property of a precious stone which unalterably preserves its natural beauty no matter what happens to it.

 Marcus Aurelius.
- 4. The consciousness of a good life is its ample reward. Learn the joy of doing good. Do good secretly and blush if it is made known.
- 5. Man increases his happiness to the extent that he brings it into the lives of others.

 Bentham.
- 6. It is the will of God that we live by mutual happiness, and not by mutual unhappiness and the death of others. People help one another with their joys and not with sorrow.

 Ruskin.
- 7. The well-being of a plant is in the light; therefore a plant which is grown in the open can not question, nor does indeed question, in which direction it must grow,

46

ţ

whether the light is good or not, or if it should not rather wait for some other or better light, but accepts the one light that there is in the world and strives towards it: even so the man who has renounced selfish well-being does not argue what portion of the things taken from others he might give away; and to what favored creatures, or whether there is some higher love than the one which has proclaimed its demands, which is accessible to him and is immediately before him. And there is no other love than to lay down your soul for your neighbor: love is only then love when it is a sacrifice of self. Only when a man gives to another not only his time and his strength, but when he consumes his body for the object of his love, when he yields up his very life, only that do we all recognise as love and only therein do we all find blessedness, which is the reward of love. And only thanks to the fact that there is such love among people, thanks to this fact alone does the world exist.

Nothing so beautifies life as an established habit of being good.

VII.

Goodness is Not Only Virtue and Joy, But is Also a Weapon of Combat

- 1. It is difficult to be kind to a vicious and lying man, particularly to one who insults us, but it is just the kind of a man to whom we must be good, both for his sake and for our own.
- 2. "Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my father sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?

"Jesus saith unto him, 'I say not unto thee, Until seven times; but Until seventy times seven.'"

Matthew, XVIII, 21-22.

3. If you truly believe in the correctness of your understanding of life and desire to do good to people, you will, if the occasion calls for it, endeavor to lay your opinions before others, in order to assure those with whom you converse of the justice of your understanding of life. And in such instances, the more your companion is in error, the more important it is and the more desirable it is that he should understand and appreciate that which you would prove to him.

And yet frequently we act in a manner entirely contrary to this. We converse well with the man who is agreed or almost agreed with us; but when we see that our companion does not believe in the truth which we accept, or even does not understand it, we, indeed, try to explain the truth to him, but if he persists in disagreeing with us, or assumes as we think a stubborn attitude, or perverts the meaning of our words, how easily do we become irritated and lose our serenity. We either grow angry and say mean things to our companion, or stop the conversation, thinking that it is not worth while to argue with this dull or stubborn man.

If you mean to show the man with whom you converse some particular truth, the main thing is not to be irritated, not to make use of a single unkind or offensive expression.

Epictetus.

- 4. If you discover a fault in any man, correct him meekly, and show him wherein he is at fault. If your attempt is fruitless, blame only yourself, or better still blame no one.

 Marcus Aurelius.
- 5. If you fall out with a man, if he is dissatisfied with you, if he disagrees with you though you are in the right—the guilt is not his, but it is in your lack of kindness.



48

VIII.

Without Truthfulness No Good Deed Can Be Performed, No Truth Can Be Uttered

1. Goodness and truth are one and the same.

Giusti.

2. A stalk springs up at times and fails to bring forth blossoms. Or it blossoms at times and fails to bring forth fruit.

Those who know the truth are not equal to those who love it; and those who love it are unequal to those who lovingly do the works of truth.

Confucius.

3. "And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

"Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like:

"He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was found upon a rock.

"But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great."

Luke, VI, 46-49.

4. Answer hatred with love. Examine a difficulty while it is yet easy of solution. Take up great matters, while they are still small. The most difficult enterprises in the world have their inception while they are still easy. The greatest enterprises in the world have their inception while they are still small.

Lao-Tse.

5. There are two paths leading to perfect virtue: to be just and to refrain from harming any living creature.

The Book of Manu.

There is nothing worse than pretension to goodness. Pretension to goodness is more repulsive than out and out malice.

IX.

What a Necessary Condiment to Everything is Kindness. The Best of Qualities are Worthless Without Kindness, and the Greatest Vices May Be Forgiven Because of It

- 1. There is a natural kindness, depending on external and bodily causes—inheritance, good digestion or success. This kindness is very agreeable both to him who manifests it and to others. And there is a kindness proceeding from inner spiritual labor. This sort of kindness is less attractive, but whereas the first may not only disappear but even turn into malice, the second not only can not disappear, but constantly grows stronger.
- 2. If when doing a good deed you experience a pang of hostility or cause others to experience hostility towards yourself, stop immediately. It is a proof that you do not know how to do that which you undertook to do. Do you feel a physical or a spiritual pain, do you feel bitterness? stop, and on the one hand learn to do good without experiencing a feeling of pain, and on the other hand eliminate that which has caused the pain.
- 3. We must value even the appearance of goodness in others, because from this game of pretence whereby they secure respect for themselves which may be possibly undeserved, something more serious may ultimately develop.

It is only the mere appearance of good in our own self

which we must relentlessly extirpate, tearing down that veil with which our egotism would cover up our defects.

Kant.

- 4. A good deed accomplished gratifies, but does not satisfy. We have always the feeling that we ought to have done much more.
- 5. No matter how much good you do, there will remain something more to be desired.
- 6. There is no spontaneous inclination towards morally evil actions, but there is indubitably such a spontaneous inclination to good actions.

 Kant.
- 7. A holy man has no relentless heart. He attunes his heart to the hearts of all people. He acts towards a virtuous man as towards a man possessing virtue, towards a vicious man as towards a man capable of virtue.

Eastern wisdom.

- 8. The wiser and kindlier a man is, the more good he observes in others.

 Pascal.
 - 9. To stimulate goodness is an important part of life.

 Johnson.
- 10. In order to find joy in serving human beings and all the creatures endowed with life in general, you must first learn to do no evil to human beings and other living creatures, nor to build your life upon the sufferings and the life of others.

Goodness is a basic characteristic of the soul. If a man is not good, he was yielded to some delusion, error or passion which violates this natural characteristic.



ON REFRAINING



Men spoil their lives not so much by failing to do what they ought to do, as by doing that which they ought not to do. Therefore the greatest effort man requires in the attainment of a good life is to refrain from doing that which he ought not to do.

T.

A Good Life Requires Restraint Above All Else

- 1. There is one thing which is most essential to all men. It is to live a good life. To live a good life, however, means not so much to do the good things which we can do as to refrain from doing the evil things which we can leave undone.
- 2. All men of our present age know our life is evil, and they not only condemn the order of our life but do things which in their opinion should make life better. But life instead of improving grows thereby steadily worse. Why is it so? Because men adopt the most intricate and ingenious expedients, but fail to do the simplest and easiest thing; they do not abstain from participation in those things which make our life evil.
- 3. A man can only then know what he ought to do when he clearly understands what he ought not to do. Refraining from doing that which he ought not to do, he will inevitably do the things which he ought to do, though he may not realize why he is doing that which he does.
- 4. Question: what is best to do when you are in a hurry?

Answer: nothing.

5. When courage fails you act towards yourself as towards an invalid; but in particular undertake nothing.

- 6. If you are in doubt how to act, whether to do a thing or not to do it, know in advance that it is always better to forbear than to do. If you are not able to restrain yourself, or if you know for a certainty that the deed is good, you will not debate with yourself whether to do it or not to do it; but if you debate with yourself then, in the first instance, you know you can refrain from doing it, and further you may be sure that the thing is not wholly good. If it were wholly good you would not debate with yourself.
- 7. If you desire something so much that you feel you can not restrain yourself, do not trust yourself. It is untrue that a man can not restrain himself from anything. Only he can not restrain himself who has in advance convinced himself that he can not restrain himself.
- 8. Let every man, even a mere youth, examine his life; and if you regret but once having refrained from doing even that which is good and which you ought to do, there will be hundreds of instances causing you to regret having done that which is not good and which you ought not to have done.

TT.

Consequences of Unrestraint

- 1. Less harm results from not doing that which we ought to do than from failing to forbear doing that which we ought not to do.
- 2. Lack of restraint in one action weakens our power of restraint in another. The habit of unrestraint is a secret current beneath the foundation of a house. Such a structure is bound to collapse.
- 3. It is worse to overdo than not to do enough. It is worse to be hasty than to be tardy.

The pangs of conscience are keener for what you have done than for what you have failed to do.

- 4. The more difficult is a situation the less action it calls for. It is by activity that we generally spoil that which is commencing to mend.
- 5. The majority of men known as mean have become so through accepting their evil temper as something lawful and through yielding to it without making an effort to restrain themselves.
- 6. If you feel that you have not the strength to restrain yourself from a physical craving, the cause will be found in the fact that you failed to restrain yourself when you could and the craving has become a habit.

III.

Not All Activity is Worthy of Respect

- 1. It is a great error to think that activity as such, without taking into consideration what it consists of, is something honorable and worthy of esteem. The question is wherein does this activity consist and under what conditions does the person concerned refrain from action.
- 2. People frequently proudly abstain from innocent amusements saying that they have no time for them, that they are busy. Yet apart from the fact that a goodnatured and merry game is more needful and important than many kinds of business, the very business for the sake of which they forego pleasure is frequently of such nature that it were better left undone.
- 3. Fussy superficial activity is not only unnecessary, but is directly harmful to the genuine progress of life. Without the distractions afforded by the labors of others, doing nothing is a most painful condition (if it be not filled with inner labors), and therefore if a man lives outside of a state of luxury which is furnished by the labor of others,

he will not be idle. The principal harm does not come from idleness but from doing that which is unnecessary and is injurious.

IV.

Man Can Only Then Restrain Himself From Evil Habits When He Realizes That He is a Spiritual and Not a Physical Being

- 1. In order to learn restraint man must learn to divide himself into a physical and a spiritual man and to compel the physical man to do not that he desires but that which the spiritual man desires.
- 2. When the soul is asleep and inactive, the body irresistibly obeys the manifestation of those feelings which are evoked in it by the actions of the people around. When these people yawn, it yawns also; when they are excited, it also becomes excited; when they are angry, it also is angry; when they are moved and weep, it also sheds tears.

This involuntary subjection to outward stimulations is the cause of many evil actions which are out of harmony with the dictates of the conscience. Watch out against these external influences and refuse to yield to them.

3. Only if you have trained the physical man from childhood to obey the spiritual man will you find it easy to restrain yourself from your desires. The man who has learned to restrain himself from his desires will find life in this world joyful and easy.

V.

The More You Combat Unrestraint the Easier the Struggle Becomes

1. Between man's reason and his passions there exists a state of civil war. Man could have a little rest if he had

reason without passions or even passion without reason. But having both, he can not escape a struggle, he can not be at peace with the one without fighting against the other. He is always at war within himself. And this war is a necessity: it is life.

Pascal.

- 2. In order to esteem others as ourselves, and to do unto them as we would that they do unto us (and herein is the principal concern in life) we must be master of our own self, and in order to be master of our own self, we must train ourselves for it.
- 3. Every time that you greatly desire to do anything, stop and think: is that which you so greatly desire truly good?
- 4. In order not to commit any evil act, it is not enough to abstain from the act itself; learn to abstain from evil conversation, and especially refrain from evil thoughts. As soon as you observe that a conversation is evil—if you ridicule, condemn or abuse another—stop, be silent, don't listen. Do the same when evil thoughts enter your head: are you thinking evil of your neighbor (it is all the same whether your neighbor is deserving of criticism or not), stop and try to think of something else.

Only when you learn to abstain from evil words and evil thoughts will you have strength to abstain from evil deeds.

- 5. No matter how often you fall without attaining victory over your passions, do not lose courage. Each effort of the struggle lessens the power of passion and facilitates victory over it.
- 6. The driver does not abandon his reins because he fails to stop his horses at once, but continues to hold them—and the horses halt. Even so with our passions: if you fail

once, keep on struggling, and finally you will be the master and not your passions.

7. Every passion in the heart of man is first a suppliant, then a guest and finally the master of the house. Try and repel such a suppliant, do not open before him the doors of your heart.

VI.

The Value of Restraint to Individuals and to the Human Race

- 1. If you would be free, teach yourself to restrain your desires.
- 2. Who is wise? He who learns a little from everybody. Who is rich? He who is content with his lot. Who is strong? He who restrains himself.

 Talmud.
- 3. Some say that Christianity is the doctrine of weakness because it does not prescribe acts but mainly the refraining from acts. Christianity a doctrine of weakness! A fine doctrine of weakness, the founder of which died a martyr on the cross rather than be untrue to himself, and among whose followers there are numbered thousands of martyrs, the only people who boldly faced the evil and withstood it. The tyrants of old who put Christ to death, and the present day tyrants know full well what sort of a doctrine of weakness it is, and they dread this doctrine above all things. They feel instinctively that this doctrine alone will most surely destroy and uproot that order of things which they maintain. Much more strength is required to abstain from evil than to perform the most difficult act which we account good.
- 4. All distinctions of our wordly estate are as nothing compared with the dominion of man over self. If a man fall into the sea, it does not matter whence he fell or into

what sea. The only essential thing is can he swim or not. Strength is not in external conditions but in the art of self-mastery.

- 5. True strength is not in him who overcomes others but in him who overcomes himself, who does not let the animal in him have mastery over his soul.
- 6. He who yields himself up to passionate desires, he who seeks gratification, his passions gather ever new strength and ultimately bind him with chains. He who succeeds in overcoming his passions bursts his chains.

Buddhist wisdom.

7. Young man! Deny yourself the gratification of your desires (for amusements, luxuries, etc.), if not from an inclination to give up all these things altogether then at least in order to retain an undiminished capacity of enjoyment. Such economy by postponing enjoyment will make you all the richer.

The consciousness that enjoyment is within your power is more fruitful and vast (as are all ideals) than the feeling resulting from that enjoyment because enjoyment ceases with satisfaction.

Kant.

- 8. Do not strive so much to do good as to be good; do not strive so much to illuminate as to be pure. The soul of man dwells as though in a glass vessel, and it is within the power of man to keep this vessel soiled or clean. In the degree that the vessel is clean, the light of truth shines through it, being a light to the man himself and to others. Therefore the principal task of man is of an inner nature,—to keep his vessel pure. Do not soil yourself, and you will have light and give light to others.
- 9. Refrain only from doing that which you ought not to do, and you will do all that you ought.

60

- 10. In order to do that which we would it is frequently necessary merely to refrain from doing that which we are doing.
- 11. Gaze upon the life which the people in our world are leading; look at Chicago, Paris, London, the various cities, the factories, railways, machines, armaments, cannons, fortresses, printing establishments, museums, skyscrapers, and ask yourself the question: what is the first thing to do so that the people might lead a good life? There can be only one sure answer: cease doing all the superfluous things that the people are doing. And the superfluous in our world to-day takes in ninety-nine per cent. of the activities of men.
- 12. Thin and transparent though the falsehood be which has for its source the contrast between our life and our consciousness, it becomes thinner and distends, but does not rend. And it binds together the present order of things and prevents the new order from making its appearance.

The majority of people in the Christian world no longer believe in the principles of paganism, but accept the principles of Christianity, acknowledging the same in their consciousness, but their life continues the same as heretofore. In order to dissipate all the calamities and contradictions which afflict the people physically and morally, in other words in order to bring to earth the Kingdom of God which was foretold to humanity nineteen hundred years ago, men of our day need only one thing: moral effort. Just as a mere push is needed to give a liquid that has been cooled below its freezing point its proper crystal form, so just a moral effort is needed to lead humanity into that form of life which is proper to it, and this moral effort is that force which lays hold on the Kingdom of God.

This effort is not the effort of a movement, the effort of

the discovery of a new world philosophy and of new thoughts or the performance of some peculiar new deeds. The effort needed to enter the Kingdom of God or a new form of life is a negative effort, the effort not to follow the stream, the effort not to do the things that are not in harmony with the inner consciousness.

Thus men are brought to face the necessity of such an effort both in the cruelty of life and by the clearness and spread of the Christian teaching.

13. The minutest motion of matter affects all nature. The whole ocean is set in motion by a pebble. Even so with spiritual life, the minutest movement creates infinite results. Everything is of consequence.

Pascal.





THE SPOKEN WORD



THE SPOKEN WORD

Words are expressions of thought and may serve to unite people or to separate them; therefore they must be handled cautiously.

I.

Great is the Word

- 1. By a word we can bring people into union, by a word we can sever their union; by a word we can serve love, and likewise by a word we can serve enmity and hatred. Beware of the word that separates people or serves enmity and hatred.
- 2. Words are expressions of thought and thought is a manifestation of divine power, therefore the word must correspond with that which it expresses. It can be indifferent, but it cannot, it must not be an expression of evil.
- 3. Man is the carrier of God. He can express the consciousness of his divinity by a word. How then should he not be careful in the use of a word?
 - 4. Time passes, but the spoken word remains.
- 5. If you have time to think before beginning to speak, think is it worth while to speak, is it necessary to speak, will you not injure someone by speaking that which you would speak. And mostly it will happen that if you first think you will not commence to speak.
- 6. First think, then speak. But stop before someone says: "Enough!" Man is higher than an animal in his capacity of speech, but he is lower than the animal when gabbling at haphazard.

 Saadi.
- 7. After a lengthy conversation try to remember all that has been said and you will wonder how banal, futile and frequently evil was much that was said.

8. Listen and be attentive, but say little.

Never speak unless asked, but if asked, answer briefly, nor be ashamed if you must admit that you do not know the thing you are questioned about.

Sufi.

9. If you would pass as wellinformed—learn to question rationally, to listen attentively, to answer calmly and to cease speaking when there is nothing left to say.

Lavater.

- 10. Praise not, judge not and dispute not.
- 11. Listen to the speech of the learned man with attention, though his actions may not be in accord with his teaching. Man must have instruction, though the instruction be an inscription on the wall.

 Saadi.
- 12. There is a useful brief phrase: I know not. Teach your tongue to use it frequently. Oriental wisdom.
- 13. There is an ancient saying: say nothing evil of the dead. How unfair it is. It ought to be instead: Say nothing evil of the living. How much sorrow would not this rule remove from the world! Why say nothing evil of the dead? In our world it is a custom to render only exaggerated praise, in other words to tell only falsehoods, about the dead in obituaries and memorial observances. Such specious praise is harmful because it wipes out in the minds of the people the distinction between good and evil.
 - 14. With what shall we compare the tongue in the mouth of man? It is the key to the treasure house; when the door is locked no one can tell whether behind it are precious stones or heaps of useless rubbish.

 Saadi.
 - 15. While wise men teach us that silence is useful, free speech is likewise needful, only at the proper time.

We sin by words both if we are silent when we ought to speak, and if we speak when we ought to be silent.

II.

Saadi

When You are Angry, Be Silent

- 1. If you know how people should live and mean well with them, you will tell them. And you will do so in such a manner that they trust your words. In order that they may trust you and understand you, you must express your thoughts without irritation or anger, but calmly and kindly.
- 2. If you would convey some truth to your listener, the main thing is not to be irritated and not to use an unkind or an offensive word.

 Epictetus.
 - 3. The unspoken word is golden.
- 4. Not to think first before speaking is advisable only when you feel yourself to be calm, kindly and loving. But if you are restless and irritated, take care that you do not sin in word.
- 5. If you can not instantly still your wrath, restrain your tongue. Be silent, and you will regain your calmness.

Baxter.

- 6. Take care that in a discussion your words be gentle, your arguments firm. Endeavor not to irritate your adversary, but to convince him.

 Wilkins.
- 7. As soon as we feel anger in an argument, we are arguing not for the sake of truth, but for our own sake.

Carlyle.

III.

Do Not Ouarrel

1. The beginning of a quarrel is like water seeping through the dam, the moment it breaks through it cannot be



68

restrained. And every quarrel is provoked and kept alive by words.

Talmud.

2. Quarrel convinces nobody, it merely separates and exasperates. What a nail is to a hammer, even so the quarrel is to human opinions. Opinions that had been a little shaky are driven firmly into a man's head after a quarrel, as nails are driven in down to their head by a hammer.

Juvenal.

- 3. Truth is lost sight of in quarrels. He who is wiser stops the quarrel.
- 4. You may listen to quarrels, but do not participate therein. May the Lord preserve you from quick temper and hotheadedness even in their slightest manifestation. Anger is always out of place, and most of all in a righteous matter, because it obscures it and clouds it.

 Gogol.
- 5. The best answer to a madman is silence. Every word of retort will rebound from the madman upon your own head. To reply to insult with insult is like throwing fagots into a fire.

IV.

Thou Shalt Not Judge

1. "Judge not, that ye be not judged.

"For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

"And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

"Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and behold, a beam is in thine own eye? "Thou hypocrite, first cast the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye."

Matthew VII, 1-5.

- 2. Almost invariably, if we search within, we find the same sin that we condemn in others. And if we do not know in ourselves the very sin which we condemn in others, with a little search we shall find a worse sin.
- 3. The moment you begin to judge a man, bear in mind not to say anything evil even if you know this evil thing for a certainty, but particularly if you are not certain of it and merely repeat the words of another.
- 4. Judging others is always inaccurate, because no one knows what has occurred and is occurring in the soul of him who is being judged.
- 5. It is well to agree with a friend to stop one another as soon as either commences to judge his neighbor. And if you have no such friend, make such an agreement with yourself.
- 6. To condemn people to their face is evil because it offends them, and to condemn them behind their back is dishonest because it deceives them. The best thing is not to seek anything evil in people and to forget it, but to seek the evil in our own self and to remember it.
- 7. A witty condemnation is offal disguised with a savory sauce. The sauce conceals the offal, and without noticing it you are apt to fill yourself with loathsome things.
- 8. The less people know of the evil acts of others, the stricter they are with themselves.
- 9. Never listen to a man who speaks evil of others and well of yourself.
- 10. He who traduces me behind my back fears me, he who praises me to my own face despises me.

Chinese proverb.

and the same of the same of the same

- 11. People are so fond of backbiting that it is hard to abstain from condemning those who are absent in the desire to please one's listeners. But if men must be pleased, try to set before them a different sort of a treat rather than something so harmful both to yourself and to those whom you would please.
- 12. Cover up another's sin, and God will forgive two of yours.

V.

Harmful Effects of Unrestraint in Words

- 1. We know that a loaded gun must be handled carefully, but we refuse to realize that a word must be handled with as much care. A word may not only kill but also cause evil that is worse than death.
- 2. Offences of the body arouse our indignation; gluttony, fighting, adultery and murder, but we regard lightly the offences by words: censure, insult, gossip, the printing or writing of harmful and corrupting words; yet the consequences of the offences with words are much graver and more far-reaching than the offences of the body. The difference is only this: the effects of an offence of the body are instantly noticeable. But the evil of word crimes we cannot observe because their effects are removed from us by distance and time.
- 3. There was once a large gathering of over a thousand people in a theatre. In the midst of the performance a silly fellow bethought himself of a practical joke and shouted the one word: fire. The people rushed to the doors. A panic occurred, many were crushed, and when quiet was restored, twenty persons were found dead and more than fifty injured.

Such is the evil that one foolish word may cause. Here

in a theatre you could see an exhibition of the evil effects of one foolish word, but it frequently happens that the effects of a foolish word may not be as noticeable as in this theatre, but none the less cause still more evil, though gradually and unnoticed

- 4. Nothing so encourages idleness as small talk. If people only observed silence without resorting to the idle trifles with which they seek to banish the tediousness of idleness, they would find idleness intolerable and go to work.
- 5. To speak evil of others harms three people in one: him of whom evil is spoken; him to whom evil is spoken; but most of all him who speaks evil of others.

Basil the Great.

- 6. Judging people behind their back is harmful especially for the reason that the criticism of the defects of a man, which related to him face to face might be useful to him, is hidden from him to whom it might do good, and is communicated to those to whom it can only do harm by arousing a feeling of ill will towards him who is judged.
- 7. You will seldom regret to have kept silence, but how often do you not regret to have spoken, and how much oftener would you regret if you but knew all the consequences of your words.
- 8. The more anxious you are to speak, the greater the risk that you will say something evil.
- 9. Great is the strength of the man who preserves silence though he be right.

 Cato.

VI.

The Value of Silence

- 1. Give more rest to your tongue than to your hands.
- 2. Silence is often the best of answers.

- 3. Turn your tongue seven times before saying a word.
- 4. One must either be silent or utter words that are better than silence.
- 5. He who says much does little. The wise man is always afraid lest his words promise more than he can perform, and therefore he remains silent more often, and speaks only then when it is needful for others and not for himself.
- 6. I have passed my life among wise men and I have never found anything better for man than silence.

Talmud.

- 7. If out of a hundred occasions you once regret that you failed to speak what you ought to have spoken, surely out of a hundred occasions you will find ninety-nine to regret that you spoke when you should have remained silent.
- 8. The fact alone that a good intention has been expressed in words weakens the desire to carry it into effect. But how to restrain from expressing the lofty though self-satisfied enthusiasms of youth? Only in later years, remembering them, you regret them as you regret a flower that you plucked before its time and later found in the mire—faded and trodden under foot.
- 9. The word is the key to the heart. If conversation leads to nothing, even one word is superfluous.
- 10. When you are alone think of your sins, when you are in company, forget the sins of the others.

Chinese proverb.

11. If you very much desire to speak, ask yourself: why are you so anxious to speak? is it for your own gain, or for the gain, for the good of others? If for your own, try and keep silence.

- 12. It is best for the foolish man to be silent, but if he knew this, he would not be foolish.

 Saadi.
- 13. People learn how to speak, but the principal science is how and when to keep silent.
- 14. When you speak, your words should be better than silence.

 Arabic proverb.
 - 15. The man of many words cannot avoid sin.

If a word be worth a coin, silence is worth two.

If silence is meet for the wise, how much more so for the foolish.

Talmud.

VII.

The Value of Restraint in Words

- 1. The less you say, the more work will you accomplish.
- 2. Wean yourself from judging others, and you will feel in your soul an increased capacity for love, you will realize a growth in life and blessedness.
- 3. Mohammed and Ali met once a man who thinking that Ali had injured him commenced to abuse him. For a time Ali bore this abuse patiently and in silence, but finally he could not restrain himself and gave abuse for abuse. Then Mohammed left them. When Ali rejoined Mohammed, he reproached him: "Why did you leave me alone to bear the insults of this insolent fellow?" "When this man abused you," replied Mohammed, "and you bore it in silence I saw ten angels around you and the angels reproved him. But when you began to pay him back in abuse, the angels left you, and I also walked away."

Mohammedan tradition.

4. To conceal the defects of others and to mention



that which is good in them, is a sign of love and the best means to draw to yourself the love of your neighbor.

Pious Thoughts.

5. The blessedness of the life of people is their love one for another. And an unkind word may violate love.



THOUGHT



Even as a man can restrain himself from committing an act, if he realizes that it is evil, so can a man restrain himself from a thought which attracts him if he acknowledges it to be evil. This restraint in thought is the chief source of the strength of man, because all acts have their inception in thoughts.

I.

The Purpose of Thought

- 1. You can not deliver yourself from sins, errors and superstitions by a physical effort. Deliverence is possible only through an effort of thought. Only by thought can you teach yourself to be unselfish, humble and truthful. Only when a man strives in his thoughts after self-abnegation, humility and truthfulness, will he have strength to fight with sin, errors and superstitions in his deeds.
- 2. Though thought did not reveal to us the necessity of love—thought could not reveal this—thought plays an important part in pointing out that which obstructs love. This very effort of thought against that which obstructs love, this very effort of thought, I repeat, is more significant, needful and precious than all other things.
- 3. If man did not think, he could not comprehend why he lives. And if he did not comprehend why he lives, he could not know what is good and what is evil. Therefore nothing is more precious to man than right thinking.
- 4. People speak of moral and religious teaching and of science as though they were two distinct guides of man. In reality, however, there is only one guide—conscience, that is the consciousness of the voice of God who dwells in us. This voice decides beyond doubt for each man what

78

he ought and what he ought not to do. And this voice may be summoned at all times from within by any man through an effort of thought.

5. If a man did not know that he could see with his eyes and for that reason refrained from opening them, he would be very pitiable indeed. Even so, nay even more is to be pitied he who does not realize that the power to think was granted him for the purpose of calmly bearing all misfortunes. If a man is sensible, he can easily bear misfortunes; first because his reason tells him that all misfortunes pass away and frequently are transformed into blessings, and second because with a rational man all misfortunes redound to his benefit. Yet people instead of facing misfortunes boldly endeavor to avert them.

Is it not better to rejoice that God has given us power not to grieve over what occurs independent of our will, and to thank him that he has put our soul under subjection only to that which is in our own power, namely to our reason. For he did not put our soul under subjection to our parents, nor to our brothers, nor to wealth, nor to our body, nor to death. In His mercy he put it under subjection only to that which depends on us—to our thoughts.

And we must observe these thoughts and their purity with all our strength.

Epictetus.

- 6. When we recognize a new thought and find that it is true, it seems to us as though we had known it for a long time and merely remember what we already knew. All truth is already implanted in the soul of every man. Only do not choke it with falsehood, and sooner or later it will reveal itself to you.
- 7. It may frequently happen that a thought visits you which seems both true and strange and you dare not trust it. But after a while, having carefully thought over the

matter, you will see that the thought which had seemed passing strange is the simplest kind of truth, so that the moment you recognize you can never cease believing it.

- 8. All great truths before passing into the consciousness of man must inevitably go through three phases; the first: "This is so absurd, it is not worth considering"; second: "This is against all morals and religion"; third: "This is so obvious it is not worth talking about."
- 9. When you live together with others do not forget the things which you have learned in solitude. And in solitude consider those things which you learned from companionship with others.
- 10. We can attain wisdom by three ways: first, by way of experience, this is the most difficult way; second, by way of imitation, this is the easiest way; and third by way of meditation, and this is the noblest way.

 Confucius.

II.

The Life of Man is Determined by His Thoughts

- 1. The fate of man, whatever it be, depends solely upon his manner of understanding his life through his thoughts.
- 2. All great changes in the life of the individual and of the human race have their inception and completion in thought. A change of feelings and actions requires first of all a preceding change of thought.
- 3. In order to transform an evil life into a good life, it is needful first of all to try and understand why the life became so evil, and what must be done in order to make it good. Therefore in order to make life better, it is necessary first to think and then to act.
- 4. It would be well if wisdom could be poured out of one man who has much into another who has little, even as

water is poured from one vessel into another until there is an equal quantity in both. But in order to be able to receive wisdom from another a man must first think for himself.

5. All that is truly needful to man must be obtained with laborious and constant toil. Thus do we acquire crafts and all sorts of knowledge, and even thus is acquired that which is the most needful thing in life, the art of living a good life.

In order to learn how to live right, you must first teach yourself how to think right.

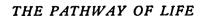
- 6. The transition of our life from one stage to another is determined not by visible acts which we commit by our will: marriage, removal to another place of residence, change of profession, but by the thoughts which come to us as we walk, or in the dead of night, or as we eat, particularly by such thoughts as embrace the whole of our past, saying: "You acted wrongly, you ought to have acted differently." And all of our following acts, like slaves, serve these thoughts and obey their will.

 Thoragu.
- 7. Our habits of thought lend their peculiar hue to all things with which we come in contact. If these thoughts are false they will render false the most exalted truths. Our habits of thought form something far more substantial for us than the house we dwell in. We carry them about with us even as the snail carries the shell in which it lives.

Lucy Mallory.

8. Our desires will not become good until we correct our habits of thought. Habits of thought determine desires. And habits of thought are formed by communing with the results of the wisdom of the best men of the world.

Seneca.



9. That which is at rest may be kept at rest. That which has not yet appeared may be easily prevented. That which is yet weak may be easily broken. That which is yet little may be easily scattered.

The big tree started as a small twig. The nine-storied tower commenced with the laying of single bricks. Journeys of thousands of miles commence with the first step. Take care of your thoughts—they are the origin of acts.

Lao-Tse.

- 10. Our thoughts, good or evil, send us to paradise or to hell—not in the heavens or under ground, but right here in this life.

 Lucy Mallory.
- 11. Some say that reason can not be the guide of our life, but they are people whose reason is so corrupt that they can not trust it.
- 12. Even as the life and the fate of an individual are determined by that to which he pays less heed than to his acts, namely by his thoughts, so the life of communities and nations is not determined by the events occurring among them, but by the thoughts which unite the majority of the people in these communities and nations.
- 13. Do not think that to be wise is the prerogative of some special people only. Wisdom is needful to all men, and therefore all men can be wise. Wisdom is to know wherein is the business of life and how to perform it. And in order to know this only one thing is needful: remember that thought is a great thing, and therefore think.
- 14. A thought entered my mind and then I forgot it. Well, never mind, it was only a thought. If it had been money I should have turned everything upside down until I found it. But a mere thought! Yet gigantic oaks grow from acorns. Thought determines this or that act of an

82

individual and of millions of men, and yet we dare to think that mere thought is a trifle.

III.

The Chief Source of Human Ills is Not in Men's Acts But in Their Thoughts

- 1. When misfortunes befall you know that they are not due to what you have done, but to what you have thought.
- 2. If we cannot restrain ourselves from committing a deed which we know is evil, it is due to the fact only that we first permitted ourselves to think of this evil act and failed to restrain our thoughts.
- 3. Strive not to think of the things which you believe to be evil.
- 4. More injurious than evil acts are those thoughts which lead to evil acts. An evil act need not be repeated and it can be repented. But evil thoughts give birth to evil deeds. An evil act points the path to other evil acts. Evil thoughts drag you along upon the path to evil deeds.
- 5. Fruit is born of a seed. Even so deeds are born of thoughts.

Even as evil fruit is born of evil seed, so evil acts are born of evil thoughts. As a farmer separates good and true seed from the seed of weeds, and selects from among the good seed the choicest and guards and sorts it; even so a prudent man treats his thoughts: he repels vain and foolish thoughts, and preserves the good thoughts, cherishing and assorting them. If you do not repel evil thoughts, nor cherish good thoughts, you can not avoid evil acts. Good deeds come from good thoughts only. Cherish good thoughts, searching for them in the books of wisdom, in sensible conversations and above all in your inner self.



6. So that a lamp may give steady light it must be placed where it is protected from the wind. But if a lamp be in a windy place, the light will flicker and cast strange and dark shadows. Even so uncontrolled, foolish and ill assorted thoughts cast strange and dark shadows upon the soul of man.

Brahminic wisdom.

IV.

Man Has Power Over His Thoughts

- 1. Our life is good or evil depending on our thoughts. But we can direct our thoughts. Therefore in order to live a good life man must labor over his thoughts, nor yield to evil thoughts.
- 2. Take care to purify your thoughts. If you have no evil thoughts you will commit no evil deeds.

Confucius.

3. Guard your thoughts, guard your words, guard your actions from evil. Observe these three paths in purity, and you will enter the path designed by the All-Wise one.

Buddhist wisdom.

- 4. All things are in the power of Heaven excepting our desire to serve God or self. We can not hinder the birds from flying over our head, but we can prevent them from building a nest on our head. Even so we can not stop evil thoughts from flashing through our mind, but it is within our power to prevent them from nesting therein and raising a brood of evil acts.

 Luther.
- 5. We can not repel an evil thought once it enters our mind, but we can recognize the thought as evil. And if we know that it is evil, we can refuse to yield to it. The thought comes to us that this or that man is bad. I could not pre-



24

vent this thought, but if I realize that it is evil, I can remember that it is wrong to judge people and that I am bad myself, and remembering all this I can restrain myself from judging even in thought.

6. If you would have benefit from your thoughts try to think entirely independently of your feelings and your condition, without twisting your thoughts into justifying the feelings which you experience or the acts which you commit.

V.

Live the Life of the Spirit in Order to Have Strength to Rule Your Thoughts

- 1. We frequently think that physical strength is the most important thing. We think so because our body willy-nilly always appreciates physical strength. But spiritual strength, the power of thought, appears so insignificant that we refuse to acknowledge it as strength. And yet true power capable of changing our life and the life of all men is in the strength of the spirit alone.
- 2. The spiritual directs the physical, not the physical the spiritual. Therefore, in order to change his condition, man must labor on himself in the domain of the spiritual—in the domain of thought.
- 3. Our life improves or deteriorates in accordance with our consciousness of ourselves as spiritual or material creatures. If we are conscious of being a material creature we weaken our true life, we strengthen and arouse passions, greed, conflicts, hatred and fear of death. If we are conscious of being spiritual beings we stimulate and elevate life, deliver it from passions, conflicts and hatred, we release love. And the passage from the consciousness of being a material creature into that of a spiritual being is effected by an effort of thought.



4. This is what Seneca wrote to a friend:

"You do well, friend Lucinius, to endeavor with all your strength to maintain yourself in a good and kindly spirit. Every man can at all times attain the same disposition. In order to attain it, it is not necessary to lift up your hands to heaven and to beg the temple watchman to let you come closer to God, so that He may hear you better: God is always close to you, He is within your own self. The Holy Spirit dwells in us, witness and guardian of what is good and what is evil. He acts towards us as we act towards him. If we guard him—he guards us also."

5. When you are in doubt, when you do not know which is good and which is evil, you must withdraw from the world; only worry about the judgment of the world prevents you from seeing what is good and what is evil. Withdraw from the world, in other words, enter within yourself, and all doubt will vanish.

VI.

The Opportunity of Communing in Thought with the Living and the Dead is One of the Choicest Blessings of Man

- 1. Young people frequently say: "I do not wish to live as others think—I must think out things for myself." This is quite right. Your own thoughts are more valuable to you than anybody else's. But why give thought to that which has already been thought out? Take that which is ready and go further. In being able to benefit by the thoughts of others lies the strength of the human race.
- 2. The efforts which deliver man from sins, errors, and superstitions have their inception in thoughts. One of the principal aids of man in this struggle is his ability to commune with the reasoning activity of the sages and

saints who have gone before. Such communion with the thoughts of the saints and sages of old is prayer, that is, repetition of those words wherein these men expressed their relation to their soul, to other people, to the world and to its beginning.

3. It has been accepted since of old that prayer is necessary to man.

With men of olden days, and still with the majority of men to-day, prayer is an appeal under certain conditions, in certain locations, accompanied by certain acts and words, addressed to God or to other divinities, and intended to appease them.

Christian doctrine knows no such prayers. It teaches that prayer is needful not as an instrument of deliverance from worldly ills, nor as a means of securing worldly blessings, but as a means of strengthening man in good thoughts.

- 4. True prayer is important and needful for the soul because in such prayer, being alone with God, our thought reaches the highest pinnacle attainable to it.
- 5. Christ said: When thou prayest, pray in secret (Matthew VI, 5-6). Only then will God hear you, God who is within you, and in order that He may hear you, you must only dispel all that conceals Him from you.
- 6. Despondence is that state of the soul in which a man fails to see any purpose either in his own life or in the life of the whole world. There is only one way to be rid of this condition: to summon from within yourself the best thoughts that you are conscious of, either your own thoughts or the thoughts of others, and this process may illuminate to you the meaning of your own life. The summoning of these thoughts may be effected by the repetition of those supreme truths that you know and that you can express to yourself—and this is prayer.

87

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE

- 7. Pray unceasingly. The most needful and the most difficult of prayers is to remember amid the activities of life your duties before God and His law. Have you been frightened, angered, confused, tempted—make an effort, remember who you are and what you ought to do. Herein is prayer. This is difficult at first, but the habit may be developed.
- 8. From time to time it is well to modify your prayer, that is the expression of your relation to God. Man changes constantly, grows constantly, and therefore his relation to God must change and become more manifest. And even so must his prayer be modified.

VII.

Good Life is Impossible Without Effort of Thought

- 1. Appreciate good thoughts, your own and those of others, as soon as you recognize them. Nothing will aid you as much as good thoughts in the accomplishment of the true task of your life.
- 2. Be master of your thoughts if you would attain your purpose. Fix the glance of your soul upon that one pure light which is free from passions.

Brahminic wisdom.

3. Meditation is the path to immorality; frivolity is the path to death. Those who are watchful in meditation never die, but the frivolous and unbelievers are even as the dead.

Arouse thyself, then protected by thyself and penetrating into thyself, thou wilt be immutable.

Buddhist wisdom.

4. The true strength of man is not in impulse, but in the uninterrupted steady striving after good which he de-

88

termines in his thoughts, expresses in his words and realizes in his actions.

- 5. If looking back over your life you observe that your life has grown better and freer from sins, errors and superstitions, know that you owe this success only to the labor of your thoughts.
- 6. Thought activity is precious not only because it corrects our life, but also because it is helpful in the life of other people as well. This is what makes the effort of thought so valuable.
- 7. This is what the Chinese philosopher Confucius says about the significance of thought:

True learning teaches men the highest good—to be reformed and to abide in that state. In order to attain supreme good it is necessary that wellbeing reign throughout the nation. In order to have wellbeing throughout the nation it is necessary to have wellbeing in the family. In order to have wellbeing in the family it is necessary to have wellbeing within oneself. In order to attain wellbeing within oneself the heart must be corrected. In order to have your heart corrected you must have clear and truthful thoughts.

VIII.

Man is Distinguished from an Animal Only by Having the Capacity of Thinking

- 1. Man is distinguished from an animal only by his capacity of thinking. Some people increase this capacity in themselves, others pay no heed to it. These latter people act as though they would surrender that which distinguishes them from the beast.

 Eastern wisdom.
- 2. A cow, a horse, or any other animal, no matter how hungry it may be, will never leave the court if the gates

open inwards. It will starve to death if the gate be stout and there be none to open it, for it will never think of walking away from the gate pulling it along. Man alone understands that he must suffer awhile, labor, and do those things which he may not desire at the moment, in order to bring about a desired result. Man may restrain himself from eating, sleeping or drinking, because he knows what is good and what he ought to do or what is evil and what he ought not to do. Man learns these things through his capacity of thinking.

This capacity is the most valuable possession of man and he should guard it and cultivate it with all his strength.

3. Compared with the world surrounding him, man is but a feeble reed, but a reed endowed with the capacity of thinking.

The merest trifle suffices to kill a man. And yet man is higher than any other creature, higher than anything earthly, because even when dying he is conscious of the fact that he is dying.

Man may be conscious of his insignificance before nature, but nature itself is not conscious of anything.

Our whole advantage is in the capacity of thinking. Our thought elevates us above the rest of the world. Let us prize and sustain our power of thought and it will illumine our whole life, showing us wherein is good and wherein is evil.

Pascal.

4. A man may learn to read and write, but this knowledge will not enlighten him whether he should write a letter to a friend or a complaint against someone who has injured him or leave it alone. A man may learn to use musical instruments, but music will not tell him when he should sing or play and when he should leave singing and

playing alone. Eve so in all things. Only reason suggests to us what to do, when to do it, or what not to do and when.

Having endowed us with reason, God put at our disposal that which is most needful. Giving us reason it is as though He said: In order that you may avoid evil and lay hold on the blessings of life, I have implanted within you a divine particle of Myself. I have given you reason. If you apply it to all that happens to you, nothing in the world will be an obstacle or impediment to you on the road which I have designed for you, and you will never complain of your fate or against people, you will never judge them or cringe before them. Do not reproach me for not having given you more. Is it not enough for you to be able to live your life reasonably, peacefully and happily?

Epictetus.

- 5. A wise proverb says that God visits us without ringing the bell. This means that there is no partition between us and the infinite, that there is no wall between man—the effect, and God, the cause. The walls have been removed, we are open to all the profound effects of divine characteristics. Only the labor of thought keeps open the hole through which we commune with God. *Emerson*.
- 6. Man is created that he may think; therein is his entire merit and worth. The duty of man is only in thinking right. The proper order of thinking is to commence with self, with the Creator and one's purpose in life. But what do the people of the world think about instead? Not at all of these things, but merely of having a good time—of becoming rich, of glory, of gaining a throne, without thinking what it means to be a king and what it means to be a man.

Pascal.



SELF-RENUNCIATION



.



SELF-RENUNCIATION

The happiness of a man's life is in communion with God and with his fellow-beings through love. Sins prevent this communion. The cause of sins is in that the man seeks to build his happiness upon the gratification of the passions of his body and not the love of God and of his fellowman. Therefore the happiness of man lies in the deliverance from sins. The deliverance from sins is in the effort to renounce the life of the flesh.

I.

The Law of Life Is In the Renunciation of the Flesh

- 1. All the sins of the body: adultery, luxury, sloth, covetousness and malice, are due to the acknowledgment of the body as one's real "I," that is, due to the subjection of the soul to the body. The deliverance from sins is only in the acknowledgment of the soul as one's "I," in the subjection of the body to the soul.
- 2. "Then said Jesus unto his disciples, if any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross and follow me.

"For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.

"For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?"

Matthew XVI, 24-26.

3. "Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again.

"No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to

94

take it up again. This commandment have I received of my Father."

John X, 17-18.

The mere fact that a man can renounce the life of his body clearly shows that there is something in man for the sake of which he renounces.

5. The more you yield to that which is of the body, the more you lose of the spiritual.

The more you surrender of the things that are of the body, the more you will gain of the things that are of the spirit. Judge which of the two is more needful to you.

- 6. Self-renunciation is not the renunciation of self, but the removal of your "I" from the animal being into the spiritual. To renounce self is not to renounce life. On the contrary, to renounce carnal life is to increase your true spiritual life.
- 7. Reason demonstrates to man that the gratification of the demands of his body can not be his true happiness, therefore reason irresistibly draws man to that happiness which is his prerogative, but for which there is no room in his bodily life.

It is commonly said and believed that renunciation of physical life is a heroic act: this is untrue. The renunciation of the physical life is not a heroic deed, but an inevitable condition of human life. In the case of the animal the wellbeing of the physical life and the continuity of species resulting therefrom is the supreme purpose of life. But with man the life of the body and the continuity of species are only a phase of existence in which the true blessedness of his life is revealed to him, and this does not coincide with his bodily wellbeing. For man the life of the body is not all of life, but merely a necessary prerequisite of the true life which consists in the ever-increasing union with the spiritual principle of the world.



TT

The Inevitableness of Death Necessarily Leads Man to the Consciousness of Spiritual Life Which is Not Subject to Death

1. When an infant is born it seems to him that he is the only thing in the world. He yields to no one, to nothing, he does not care to know anyone: only give him that which he craves. He even does not know his mother, but knows her breast only. Days, months and years pass, and the child begins to understand that there are other beings like him, and what he craves for himself, others crave for themselves also. And the longer he lives, the more he realizes that he is not alone in the world, and that he must if he be strong—fight with others for that which he craves, or if he be weak, he must submit to that which is. And moreover the longer a man lives, the more he realizes that his life is but for a season and may terminate at any moment in death. He observes death seizing now this one, now that one before his very eyes and knows that any moment the same may happen to him, as sooner or later it most surely will. And he can not escape the realization that there is no true life in his body, and whatever he may do for his body in this life, it is to no purpose.

And when man has clearly realized this, he will also realize that the spirit which dwells in him does not dwell in him alone, but dwells in all, in the whole world, and that this spirit is the spirit of God. And having realized this, man will cease to ascribe any significance to his bodily life, but will divert his purpose to the attainment of a union with the spirit of God, with that which is eternal.

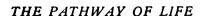
2. Death, death, death waits for you every instant. Your life is passing in the sight of death. If you labor for the future of your bodily life, you know in your own heart



96

that the future has only one thing in store for you: death. And this death destroys all that you labor for. You may say that you labor for the good of generations to come, but they also will vanish and no trace will remain of them. Therefore life for the sake of material things has no sense. Death destroys all life of this kind. In order that your life may have a meaning, you must live so that death could not destroy the work of your life. Such is the life that Christ reveals to men. He reveals to men that alongside of that bodily life which is a mere shadow of life there is also another, a true life which gives true blessedness to man, and that every man knows this life in his heart. The teaching of Christ is the teaching of the unreality of personal life, of the necessity of renouncing it and of transferring the meaning and the purpose of life into divine life, the life of humanity as a whole, the life of the Son of Man.

3. In order to understand the teaching of Christ as to the salvation of life, it is necessary to understand clearly what Solomon, and Buddha, and all the wise men said of the personal life of man. It is possible, as Pascal says, to ignore all these things, to carry with us little screens that would hide from our eves the abvss of death towards which we are rushing; but it suffices to think for a moment what is the bodily life of an individual man, in order to realize that this life, if it be the life of the body merely, has no sense, that it be a cruel mockery of the heart, of the reason of man and of all that is good within him. And therefore in order to understand the teaching of Christ it is necessary first of all to bethink yourself and to take heed, it is necessary to experience that in your inner self which Christ's precursor John preached to men who were beset with perplexities even as we. He said: "First of all repent, then come to your senses or you will all perish." And



Christ commencing his sermon said the same: "Take heed, or you will perish." Speaking of the Galileans whom Pilate had slain, Christ said: "Did you think that these Galileans were more sinful than any other Galileans that they suffered so much? No, I say unto you, but if you do not repent, you will all likewise perish." Death, the inevitable, is before us all. We strive in vain to forget about it, but this will not save us; on the contrary, when it comes unexpectedly it will be all the more dreadful. There is but one salvation: renounce the life which dieth, and live the life for which there is no death.

4. It suffices to renounce for a moment our customary life and to look at it from the outside, as it were, in order to see that all the things we undertake for the supposed security of our life, we do not undertake to make our life more secure, but merely to busy our mind with this fictitious security and to forget that nothing can ever make our life secure. Not content with deceiving ourselves and imperiling our true life for the sake of the imaginary life, this striving for security more often than not ruins the very things we would make secure. The rich man seeks the security of his life in money, and this money tempts a robber to slav him. The nervous man tries to secure his life with medicines, and these medicines slowly kill him. or if they do not kill him, they surely deprive him of true life. It is the same with nations which arm themselves to secure their life and liberty, and yet this same striving for security leads to wars and to the destruction of hundreds of thousands of men on battlefields, and to the loss of the liberty of the nations as well.

The teaching of Christ that you can not make this life

98

secure but must be ready to die at any moment gives more happiness than the teaching of the world that life must be made secure, if for no other reason at least because the inevitableness of death and the insecurity of life remain the same whether you follow the teachings of the world or the teaching of Christ; in the latter case, however, our life is not wholly swallowed up by the idle labor for the attainment of a false security, but is liberated and may be devoted to the one purpose proper to it: the perfecting of our soul and the increase of love to others.

- 5. He who in his dying body does not see himself, has comprehended the truth of life.

 Buddhist wisdom.
- 6. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?

Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?

Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?

But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

Matthew VI, 25-27, 31, 33, 34.



III.

The Renunciation of the Animal "I" Reveals God in the Soul of Man

- 1. The more man renounces his bodily "I," the more God reveals himself in him. The body hides the God in man.
- 2. Would you attain the consciousness of the all-embracing "I," then you must first know yourself. In order to know yourself you must sacrifice your "I" to the universal "I."

 Brahminic wisdom.
- 3. He who renounces his personality is powerful, for his personality has been concealing God within him. As soon as he has thrown off his personality, it is God who acts in him and no longer his own personality.
- 4. If you despise the world, there is small merit therein. To him who lives in God, both his own self and the world will be always as nought.

 Angelus.
- 5. The renunciation of the bodily life is valuable, necessary and blessed only if it is a religious renunciation, that is if man renounces self, his body, in order to do the will of God who dwells in him. But when man renounces his bodily life not to do the will of God, but to do his own will or the will of men like himself, such renunciation is neither valuable nor useful nor blessed, but on the contrary harmful to himself and to others.
- 6. If you seek to please others so that they may be grateful to you, your endeavors will be in vain. But if you do good to people without thinking of them, but for God, you will not only do good to yourself, but people will also be grateful to you.

100

He who forgets himself is remembered of God, he who is mindful of himself is forgotten of God.

- 7. Only when we die to self in our body are we resurrected in God.
- 8. If you expect nothing nor seek to receive anything from other people, people will not terrify you, any more than one bee terrifies another or one horse terrifies another. But if your happiness is in the power of other people you will always fear people.

We must begin with this: renounce all that does not belong to us, renounce it to such degree that it has no mastery over us, renounce all that the body needs, renounce love of wealth, of glory, of positions, of honors, renounce wife, children, brothers. We must say to ourselves that none of these things belong to us.

But how to attain this? Subject your will to that of God: does he will that I have a fever? I will so likewise. Does He will that I do this instead of that? I will so likewise. Does He will that something happen to me which I do not expect? I will so likewise.

Epictetus.

9. Our own will never satisfies, though all of its demands may be met. But the moment we renounce it, we feel complete contentment. Living for our own will, we are always discontented; renouncing it we are bound to be contented. The only true virtue is hating ourselves, because every man deserves hatred for his passions. But hating self, man seeks a being worthy of love. Being, however, unable to love anything that is outside of us, we are bound to love that being which is within us, but is not our own self, and there can be only one such being—the universal Being. The Kingdom of God is within us; universal blessing is within us, but we are not it.

Pascal.

IV.

Renunciation of Self Alone Makes It Possible to Love Others

1. Only that does not perish which does not live for self. But he who does not live for self, for what shall he live? Only when living for All can you live without living for self. Only living for All man can be and is at peace.

Lao-Tse.

- 2. Even if you so desired, you cannot cut off your life from that of humanity. You live in it, by it, and for it. Living among people you can not escape self-renunciation, because we are created for reciprocity, even as the feet, the hands and the eyes, and reciprocity is impossible without self-renunciation.

 Marcus Aurelius.
- 3. You cannot compel yourself to love others. You can only cast aside that which hinders love. And the love of your animal "I" hinders love.
- 4. Love your neighbor as yourself does not mean that you should try to love your neighbor. You can not compel yourself to love. Love your neighbor means to cease loving yourself above all things. And the moment you cease loving yourself above all things you will involuntarily love your neighbor as yourself.
- 5. In order to love others in deed and not in word, you must also cease loving yourself in deed and not in word. But it usually happens like this: we say that we love others, but love them in word only, yet we love ourselves not in word but in deed. We may forget to clothe, to feed or to shelter others, but we never forget ourselves. And therefore in order that we may love others in deed we must learn to forget to clothe, to feed and to shelter ourselves as we forget to do these things for others.

- 6. We must train ourselves to say within our soul when meeting another person: I will think of this person only, and not of myself.
- 7. It suffices to remember self in the midst of a speech, and you lose the thread of your thought. Only when we completely forget ourselves do we come out of ourselves, and only then is our association with others fruitful and we can serve them and exert a beneficial influence upon them.
- 8. The richer a man is in external things, the better off he is in worldly life, the more difficult, the more remote from him is the joy of self-renunciation. Rich people are almost entirely deprived of it. But in the case of the poor man every time he interrupts his work to assist another, every crumb of bread he gives to a beggar is a joy of self-renunciation.

And if a rich man give two out of his three millions to his neighbor he cannot experience the joy of self-renunciation.

9. There was once a destructive drouth on earth: all the rivers, brooks and wells dried up, trees, bushes and pastures were dry, people and animals were dying of thirst.

And one night a little girl came out of her hut, with a cup in her hand, seeking water for her ailing mother. The girl, failing to find water anywhere, lay down on the grass in the field and fell asleep. When she woke up and tried to pick up her cup she almost spilled it. It was filled with fresh and pure water. The little girl rejoiced and was about to drink when she remembered her mother, and fearing that there might not be enough for her, she ran home with her cup of water. She hurried so that she failed to notice a little dog at her feet, and she stumbled and dropped her cup. The little dog moaned piteously. And the girl stooped to pick up the cup.

She was afraid that she had spilt all the water out of it, but found the cup standing upright on its bottom and it was still full of water. The little girl poured some water into the palm of her hand and the dog licked it up and was happy. When the little girl finally lifted the cup it had turned into silver. The child took the cup home and gave it to her mother. But the mother said to her: "I must die anyway, drink it yourself." And in that instant the cup turned into gold. And the little girl, no longer able to resist, was about to put her lips to the cup, when a pilgrim entered and begged for water. The child immediately offered the cup to the pilgrim. And suddenly there appeared on it seven wondrous diamonds and a current of fresh and pure water issued out of it.

But the seven diamonds rose higher and higher till they reached heaven and became a constellation of seven stars known as Ursa Major.

10. That which you give to others is yours, that which you have withheld belongs to others.

If you have given anything to another person depriving yourself, you have done good to yourself and this good is eternally yours, no one can rob you of it.

But if you have kept that which another desires, you have withheld it for a season only, or until you will be compelled to part with it. For you will surely have to part with it when death comes.

11. Will the time never come when people will learn that it is as easy to live for others as they find it to die for others while participating in wars the cause of which may be unknown to them? Only the elevation and the illumination of the spirit in man will bring this about.

Brown.

104

V.

He Who Employs All His Strength in the Gratification of His Animal Desires Exclusively Destroys His True Life

- 1. If a man thinks of himself alone and seeks his own gain in everything he cannot be happy. If you would truly live for yourself live for others.

 Seneca.
- 2. In order to understand how needful it is to renounce the life of the flesh for the life of the spirit it
 suffices only to picture to oneself how repulsive would be
 the life of man if it were given up completely to his animal
 desires. The true life of man commences only with his renunciation of animalism.
- 3. In the parable of the vineyard Christ explains the error of men who accept the imaginary life—their own personal animal life—as the true life.

Men living in a master's vineyard conceived the idea that they owned it. As the result of this error they were led to commit a series of mad and cruel acts leading to their expulsion and exclusion from life. Even so have we conceived the idea that the life of each one of us is our personal property, that we have a right to it, that we may use it as we see fit, and that we have no obligations to anyone. And the same series of mad and cruel acts and misfortunes. followed by exclusion from life, for a certainty awaits us who have conceived such errors. Just as the dwellers in the vineyard either forgot or refused to realize that the vineyard had been turned over to them planted, fenced in and provided with a well, in other words, that someone had labored in it before them, and therefore expected that they also should labor therein, even so men who live a personal life forget all that has been done for them before their

coming into the world, and all that is being done for them while they live, which shows that something is expected of them.

According to the teaching of Christ just as the workers dwelling in the vineyard which was prepared for them by their master must realize their eternal indebtedness to their master, even so must men realize that from the day of their birth until their death they are irretrievably indebted to some who lived before them, who still are living and will live, as well as to that which was, is and ever will be the principle of all things. They must realize that every hour of their life confirms this obligation, so that he who lives for himself and denies this obligation which binds him to life and to the principle thereof, deprives himself of life.

- 4. People imagine that self-renunciation is a violation of freedom. Such people do not know that self-renunciation gives us true freedom, liberating us from our own self and from servitude to our own corruption. Our passions are our most cruel tyrants: renounce them and you will realize freedom.

 Fénélon.
- 5. If a man realizes his calling but does not renounce his personality, he is like to a man who has the keys to inner apartments—but has no key to the outer door.
- 6. The realization of one's calling which includes the law of self-abnegation has nothing in common with the enjoyment of life. If we cared to mix the consciousness of our calling with enjoyment and offered this mixture like a medicine to the ailing soul, the two principles would separate themselves of their own accord. But if they failed to do so, and the consciousness of the high calling of man exercised no effect, and the life of the body had from a striving after enjoyment acquired some strength supposedly



106

proportionate to that calling, moral life would vanish beyond recall.

Kant.

VI.

Deliverance from Sins is Possible Only Through Self-Renunciation

- 1. Renouncing animal happiness for the sake of spiritual blessedness is a consequence of a change of consciousness, that is the man who has previously considered himself an animal only, begins to recognize himself as a spiritual being. If this change of consciousness has been accomplished, that which previously was considered privation and suffering no longer appears as privation and suffering, but as a natural preference of that which is better to that which is worse.
- 2. They are wrong who think and say that in order to fulfill the calling of life and to attain happiness we require health, comfort and outwardly favorable conditions in general. This is untrue. Health, comfort and outwardly favorable conditions are not necessary for the fulfillment of our calling and for our happiness. We have the possibility of the happiness of spiritual life which nothing can violate, the happiness of increasing love within. But we must have faith in this spiritual life and concentrate all our efforts upon it.

You may live the life of the body and labor in it, but the moment obstacles appear in this bodily life betake yourself from the bodily life into the spiritual life. And spiritual life is always free. It is like the wings to a bird. A bird may walk on his feet, but no sooner is an obstacle or peril encountered than the bird having faith in his wings unfolds them and soars upward.

3. There is nothing more important than inner labor in solitude with God. This inner labor consists in ceasing



107

THE PATHWAY OF LIFE

to seek the happiness of your animal personality, in reminding yourself of the senselessness of bodily life. You can do this only when you are alone with God. When you are in the company of other people it is too late. When you are in the company of other people your actions will be good only if you have prepared in yourself the capacity of self-renunciation through solitary communion with God.

- 4. Every man sooner or later will more or less clearly experience an inner contradiction: I would live for myself and I would live rationally, but to live for myself is irrational. This seems to be contradictory, but is it? If it be so, then there is contradiction in the decaying seed which as it decays puts forth a sprout. It is a contradiction only if I refuse to listen to the voice of reason. Reason shows the necessity of removing the consciousness of life from personal life into the germinating life of the spirit. It shows me the needlessness, the senselessness of personal life, and makes me a promise of new life, just as the seed grows by breaking through the cherry pit. A contradiction is only then to be seen when we seize the outward discarded form of life, refusing to part with it, as though the outward envelope of the seed after the seed had burst through insisted on asserting its life. That which appears to us a contradiction is merely the pangs of being born into a new life. We need only cease resisting this inevitable superseding of the bodily life by the spiritual life and yield ourselves up to the spiritual life, and a new, a better, life—the true life—will reveal itself to us.
- 5. The one true and joyful work of life is to attend to the growth of our soul, and self-abnegation is necessary for this growth. Learn self-abnegation in small things. Having acquired the art of self-abnegation in small things, you will be able to deny yourself also in greater things.

6. When the light of your spiritual life is being extinguished, the dark shadows of your bodily desires fall across your path—beware of these dreadful shadows: the light of your spirit can not dissipate their darkness until you expel the desires of the body from your soul.

Brahminic wisdom.

7. The difficulty of delivering yourself from self-love is due mainly to the fact that self-love is a necessary condition of life. It is necessary and natural in infancy, but must grow weaker and disappear in accordance with the growth of reason.

An infant feels no pangs of conscience because of selflove, but in proportion to the increasing light of reason selflove becomes a burden; as life advances self-love decreases and with the approach of death it disappears completely.

- 8. To renounce self altogether is to become God; to live entirely for self is to become a beast. The life of man is an increasing movement away from the brutish life and approach to the divine life.
- 9. I loathe my life, I feel that I am all in sins, no sooner I emerge out of one sin than I fall into another. How can I, though in a measure, correct my life? There is only one effective means: to realize that my life is in the spirit and not in the body and to refuse to participate in the evil deeds of bodily life. Only will so with all your soul and you will see how your life will commence to improve. It was evil only because you served your bodily life with your spiritual life.
- 10. Vainly will a man strive to deliver himself from sins if he does not renounce his body, if he does not cease placing the demands of his body above the demands of his soul.
 - 11. Without sacrifice there is no life. Whether you

will it or not, life is altogether a sacrifice of the material to the spiritual.

VII.

The Renunciation of the Animal Personality Gives Man a True and Inalienable Spiritual Blessedness

- 1. There is but one law for the life of each individual and for the common life of all men: in order to make life better, you must be ready to yield it up.
- 2. Man can not know the effects of his life of self-renunciation. But let him try it though for a season, and I am convinced that every honest man will admit the beneficial effect upon his soul and body even of those occasional moments when he forgets himself and denies his physical personality.

 Ruskin.
- 3. The more man renounces his animal "I" the freer is his life, the more valuable it is to others and the more joyful it is to himself.
- 4. It is said in the New Testament that he who would lose his life shall find it. This means that true life is given only to him who renounces the good things of animal life.

The true life of man commences only when the man seeks the good of the soul and not of the body.

5. The life of man is like the cloud dropping in the form of rain upon meadows, fields, forests, gardens, brooks and rivers. The cloud pours itself out, refreshes and gives life to countless blades of grass, bushes, trees, and becomes luminous and transparent—and lo! it soon vanishes. Even so is the material life of a good man: he helps many, many people, he makes their lives easier, he sets their feet in the paths of righteousness, he comforts them, and now having spent himself he dies and journeys where dwelleth the Eternal, Invisible and Spiritual.



- 6. Trees yield up their fruit and even their bark, their leaves and their juices to all who need them. Happy the man who does likewise. But few there be who know this and act accordingly.

 Krishna.
- 7. There can be no happiness while you think of self. But this can not be altogether avoided. If there remains the least care of self all is ruined. I know that this is hard, but I also know that there is no other means of attaining happiness.

 Carpenter.
- 8. Many imagine that if we eliminate personality and the love of it out of our life nothing will remain. They imagine that there is no life without personality. But this seems so only to people who have never experienced the joys of self-renunciation. Eliminate personality from life, renounce it and that will remain which forms the substance of life—love which yields positive happiness.
- 9. The more man recognizes his spiritual "I," and the more he renounces his material personality, the more truly he understands himself.

 Brahminic wisdom.
- 10. The more a man removes his life from the animal existence into the spiritual plane, the more his life becomes free and joyous. But in order that man may be able to remove his life from the animal existence into spiritual plane he must recognize himself as a spiritual being. And in order that he may recognize himself as a spiritual being he must renounce material life. Faith requires self-renunciation, self-renunciation requires consciousness. One helps the other.
- 11. From the point of view of happiness the problem of life is unsolvable, as our highest aims prevent us from

4

being happy. From the point of view of duty there is also a difficulty, for duty fulfilled gives peace and not happiness.

Only divine and holy love and fusion with God destroy these difficulties, because sacrifice then becomes a constant, increasing and inviolable joy.

Amiel.

12. The idea of duty in all its purity is not only incomparably simpler, clearer and more intelligible to every man in practice and more natural than the impulse which has its beginning in happiness and is either connected with it or designed in relation to it (and which always demands a great deal of artificiality and delicate considerations), but is indeed more powerful, insistent and promising of success before the judgment of ordinary sound reason than all impulses proceeding from selfishness, if only the idea of duty is appropriated by sound sense entirely independently of selfish impulses.

The realization that I can because I ought opens up in man a treasure house of divine gifts which cause him to feel as an inspired prophet the majesty and loftiness of his true calling. And if man only paid more heed to it and learned to separate virtue entirely from those gains which are the reward of duty fulfilled, if the constant exercise of virtue were made the chief object of private and public education, the moral condition of men would speedily improve. If the experience of history has not yet yielded better results for the teaching of virtue, the fault lies in the erroneous idea that the impulse evolved from the recognition of duty is supposed to be feeble and remote, and that the soul is more strongly influenced by the more proximate impulse having as its source the calculation of gains which may be expected in part in this world, and in part in the world to come as the reward of the fulfillment of the law. Yet the



recognition by a man of the spiritual principle within him, evoking the renunciation of his personality, moves man much more potently than any rewards to the fulfillment of the law of good.

Kant.



HUMILITY





HUMILITY

The paramount blessing of man in this world is association with his kind. Proud people, setting themselves apart from others, deprive themselves of this blessing. But the humble man eliminates all inner obstacles to the attainment of this blessing. And therefore humility is a necessary prerequisite of true happiness.

I.

A Man Can Not Be Proud of His Deeds Because All the Good that He Does is Not Done by Himself But by the Divine Principle Which Dwells in Him

- 1. Only he can be humble who knows that God dwelleth in his soul. It is all the same to such a man how other people judge him.
- 2. He who considers himself master of his own life can not be humble because he thinks he is under no obligation to any one for anything. But the man who sees his calling in the service of God can not be otherwise than humble because he always feels that he has fallen far short of fulfilling all his obligations.
- 3. We frequently feel proud because we have done well, forgetting that God dwelleth in each of us, and that in doing well we are mere instruments by means of which He performs His works.

God does through me what He wills, and I dare to feel proud! It is as though a rock impeding the course of a freshet boasted that it brings forth water and that men and beasts drink thereof. But it may be said that the rock may feel proud because it is pure and does not spoil the water. This also is an error. If it is pure, it is because the water

116

has cleansed it and still cleanseth it. We have nothing of our own, all is of God.

- 4. We are the instruments of God. We know what we ought to do, but why it is not given to us to know. He who understands this can not be otherwise than humble.
- 5. The principal concern in the life of every man is to become ever better. But how can we become better if we account ourselves good?
- 6. Only then will the laborer perform his task well when he realizes his condition. Only when a man understands the teaching of Christ will he clearly understand that his life is not his own, but God's, who gave it to him—and that the purpose of life is not in man but in the will of Him who gave him life, and therefore man can only hinder the manifestation of God within himself, but can not do any good of himself.
- 7. You need only recognize yourself as servant instead of master, and immediately doubt, worry and discontent give way to certainty, peace and joy.

II.

All Errors Come From Pride

- 1. If a man strives after God he can never be satisfied with himself. No matter how far he may advance, he will still feel his remoteness from perfection, because perfection is infinite.
- 2. Self-assurance is a characteristic of the animal, humility is a characteristic of man.
 - 3. He who knows himself best esteems himself least.
- 4. He who is satisfied with himself is dissatisfied with others.

He who is always dissatisfied with himself, is always satisfied with others.

- 5. A wise man was told that some men condemned him as being wicked. He replied: "It is well that they do not know all about me, or they would consider me still worse."
- 6. There is nothing more useful to the soul than to be mindful that you are an insignificant gnat both in time and in space, and that your strength lies in your ability to realize your insignificance and therefore to be humble.
- 7. In spite of lack of attention to his defects, which is common to all men, there is not a man living who does not know more evil things of himself than he does of his neighbors.

Therefore it should be easy for any man to be humble.

Wolseley.

- 8. We need only give it a little thought and we shall always find ourselves guilty of something before humanity (let it be even the guilt arising from the existing inequality of people, whereby some enjoy certain advantages for the sake of which others must experience still greater privations), and this will keep us from accounting ourselves above other people on the strength of selfish delusions as to our merits.

 Kant.
- 9. Our defects may be seen only through the eyes of others.

 Chinese proverb.
- 10. Every man may be to us a mirror in which we can see our vices and defects, and all that is evil within us. But we most frequently act like the dog barking at its own reflection in the mirror in the belief that it sees another dog instead of itself.

 Schopenhauer.
- 11. Self-reliant, stupid and immoral people frequently inspire respect in humble, clever and moral people because

118

a humble man, judging by his own inner worth, cannot imagine that an evil person could so esteem himself.

- A man who is in love with himself has few rivals.
 Lichtenberg.
- 13. Frequently people without learning and education very clearly, consciously and easily receive the true teachings of Christianity, while the most learned people continue steeped in the mire of crassest paganism. It is because plain people are frequently humble, whereas learned people are mostly self-confident.
- 14. For a rational understanding of life and death, and in order to await the latter calmly, it is needful to realize one's insignificance.

You are an infinitely small particle of something, and you would be nothing if you did not have a definite calling or task. Only this gives a meaning and a significance to your life. And your calling is to make use of the instruments given to you and to all that is living; to spend your body in the fulfillment of the task prescribed to you. Therefore all tasks are equal and you can do nothing more than what is prescribed to you. You can be only a hinderer of God or a doer of His will. Therefore man cannot ascribe to himself anything important or great. It suffices for you to attribute to yourself some great or exceptional task, and there is no end to disappointments, contentions, envy and all sorts of suffering. It suffices that you attribute to yourself the importance of some great plant that bears fruit and you are lost.

Peace, liberty, joy of life and freedom from fear of death are granted to him only who knows that in this life he is only a servant of his Master.

III.

Humility Unites Men in Love

1. To be unknown to men, or to be misunderstood by them, and not to grieve because of it—herein is the characteristic of a truly virtuous man who loves his fellow-men.

Chinese wisdom.

- 2. Just as water can not remain on a height, even so goodness and wisdom are strangers to the proud. The one and the other seek lowly places.

 Persian wisdom.
- 3. He is a good man who remembers his sins and forgets his goodness, and he is an evil man who remembers his goodness and forgets his sins.

Do not forgive yourself, and you will easily forgive others.

4. You can recognize a good and a wise man in that he regards other people as better and wiser than himself.

The most agreeable people are the saints who consider themselves sinners; the most disagreeable people are the sinners who consider themselves saints.

Pascal.

- 6. How hard it is to love or to pity self-confident, proud and boastful people. This alone shows not only how good, but how valuable is humility. More than anything else on earth it arouses the most precious sentiment in life—love.
- 7. Everybody loves a humble man. We all strive so much to be loved, why should we not try to be humble?
- 8. So that people may live well, peace must reign among them. But where each man strives to be higher than the next, there can be no peace. The humbler men are, the more readily will they live a life of peace.



, IV.

120

Humility Unites Man With God

- 1. There is nothing stronger than an humble man, because an humble man, renouncing self, yields to God.
- 2. Beautiful are the words of the prayer: "Come and dwell in us." All is comprised in these words. Man has all that he requires if God comes to dwell in him. So that God may dwell in us, we must do only one thing: diminish ourselves in order to give place to God. As soon as man has diminished himself, God enters and dwells in him. Therefore in order to have all that is needful to him, man must first humble himself.
- 3. The more deeply man penetrates into self, and the more insignificant he appears to himself, the higher he rises towards God.

 Brahminic wisdom.
- 4. He who worships the All-Highest, pride flees from his heart even as the light of a camp fire before the rays of the sun. He whose heart is pure and in whom there is no pride, he who is humble, constant and simple, who looks upon every creature as upon his friend and loves every soul as his own, he who treats every creature with equal tenderness and love, he who would do good and has abandoned vanity—in his heart dwelleth the Lord of life.

Even as the earth is adorned with beautiful plants which she brings forth, even so is he adorned in whose soul dwelleth the Lord of life.

Vishnu Purana.

V.

How to Combat Pride

1. True humility is difficult. Our heart revolts at the thought of scorn and humiliation. We strive to hide all

things that could humiliate us before the eyes of others, we strive to hide them before ourselves. If we are evil we do not desire to see ourselves as we are. But no matter how difficult true humility may be, it is possible. Let us strive to rid ourselves of all things that impede it.

Pious thoughts.

2. The very defects which are so annoying and intolerable in others seem as nothing and impalpable in our own self. We do not feel them. It frequently happens that people speaking of others and judging them harshly fail to notice that they accurately describe themselves.

Nothing would help us more to correct our faults than if we could see ourselves in others. If we clearly saw our faults in others we should hate our faults just as they deserve.

La Bruyère.

3. Nothing is so harmful in striving after moral perfection as self-satisfaction.

Happily, if we grow better, the improvement is so imperceptible that we can not observe our success excepting after a long lapse of time.

But if we note our improvement it is a sign that we have either stopped advancing or are retrogressing.

- 4. Avoid the thought that you are better than others, and that you have virtues which others lack. Whatever your virtues be, they are worthless if you regard yourself better than other people.
- 5. Endeavor not to think well of yourself. If you can not think ill of yourself, know that it is bad enough that you can not think ill of yourself.
 - 6. Any comparison of yourself with others for the pur-

122

pose of self-justification is an error and an obstacle to good life and to its principal concern—striving after perfection. Compare yourself with supreme perfection only, and not with other people, who may be lower than you.

- 7. In order to learn humility, strive to detect yourself in proud thoughts when alone.
- 8. Are you abused or condemned—be glad; are you praised or approved—be on your guard.
- 9. Do not fear humiliations; if you can bear them in humility they will redeem themselves with the spiritual blessings that are associated with them.
- 10. Strive not to conceal in obscure nooks of your mind the humiliating remembrances of your sins, but on the contrary keep them always in readiness so that in judging the sins of others you may remember your own.
- 11. Always regard yourself as a scholar. Never think that you are too old to learn, that your soul is just as it should be and can not improve. For a rational man there is no graduation from school: he is a learner until his grave.
- 12. Only he who is humble in heart can know the truth. Humility does not evoke envy.

Big trees are borne away by the stream, small brushes remain.

A wise man said: "My child, do not grieve if you have not been rightly esteemed, for no one can deprive you of what you have done, or render to you that which you have not done. A prudent man is content with the esteem that he has merited."

"Be good-natured, respectful, friendly, caring for the gain of others, and happiness will come to you as naturally as the water finds its level."

Vishnu.

VI.

Effects of Pride

- 1. He who lacks humility always condemns others. He sees the faults of other people, but his own passions and vices grow more and more.

 Buddhist wisdom.
- 2. A man who is not enlightened by Christianity loves only himself. And loving himself, he would be great, but he sees that he is small, he would be important, but he sees that he is insignificant, he would be good, but he sees that he is evil. And seeing these things man begins to dislike the truth and to invent such arguments as would prove to him that he is indeed such as he would be, and having invented such arguments he becomes in his own eyes great, important and good. Herein is the great twofold sin-pride and falsehood. Falsehood comes from pride, and pride from falsehood.
- 3. He who fails to abhor that self-love which compels him to regard himself as above all else in the world is entirely blind, for nothing is so much out of harmony with justice and truth as such an opinion of self. It is false in itself, because one can not be higher than anything else in the world, and it is besides unfair, as everybody else seeks the same thing for himself.

 Pascal.
- 4. There is one dark spot on our sun: it is the shadow which is cast by the veneration we feel for our own person.

 Carlyle.
- 5. There is no human superiority—beauty, strength, wealth, honors, learning, enlightenment, even goodness—which unassociated with humility would not degenerate from superiorities and good qualities into repulsive charac-

123

124

teristics. There is nothing more repulsive than a man boasting of his wealth, position, learning, mind, enlightenment and goodness. People crave to be beloved of others and know that pride is repulsive, and yet they cannot be humble. Why? Because humility can not be acquired independently. Humility is the effect of removing your desires from the domain of the material into the domain of the spiritual.

VII.

Humility Offers Man Spiritual Happiness and Strength in Fighting Against Temptations

- 1. There is nothing more helpful to the soul than humiliation received with joy. Just as a warm rain after the glaring and searing sun of self-satisfaction, humiliation meekly received refreshes the soul of man.
- 2. The portal of the temple of truth and blessedness is low. Only they will enter the temple who approach it with head bowed down. And happy are they who enter. There is wide scope and freedom therein, and people love one another and help one another and know no sorrows.

This temple is the true life of man. The portal of the temple is the teaching of wisdom. And wisdom is granted unto the humble, unto those who do not lift themselves up but abase themselves.

- 3. Perfect joy, according to Francis of Assisi, is in bearing unmerited reproach, and suffering even bodily harm without experiencing enmity against the cause of the reproach and of pain. This joy is perfect because no injuries, insults or attacks of people can violate it.
- 4. "For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted."

Luke XIV. 2.



5. The feeblest thing on earth overcomes the strongest; the lowly and humble overcomes the exalted and proud. Only few in this world realize the power of humility.

Lao-Tse.

- 6. The higher a man accounts himself, the weaker he is. The lower he accounts himself, the stronger he is—both before himself and before others.
- 7. There is nothing more gentle and yielding on earth than water, and yet when it encounters that which is hard and stubborn, nothing can compare with it in strength. The feeble conquers the strong. The gentle overcomes the cruel. The humble vanquishes the proud. Everybody in the world knows this, but no one will act thereon.

Lao-Tse.

8. The rivers and seas rule the valleys over which they flow: this is because they are lower than they.

Therefore if a saint would be above the people he must strive to be lower than they. If he would lead them, he must be behind them.

Therefore again, if a saint live above the people, the people do not feel it. He is ahead of his people, but the people do not suffer because of it. And for this reason the world unceasingly praises him. The holy man quarrels with no one, and no one quarrels with him. Lao-Tse

9. Water is thin, light and yielding, but if it encounter something hard and stubborn, nothing can prevail against it. It tears down houses, it tosses great vessels like nutshells, it washes away embankments. Air is still thinner, softer and more yielding, and it is still more powerful when encountering that which is firm, hard and stubborn. It tears out big trees by the root, it also destroys houses, and



126

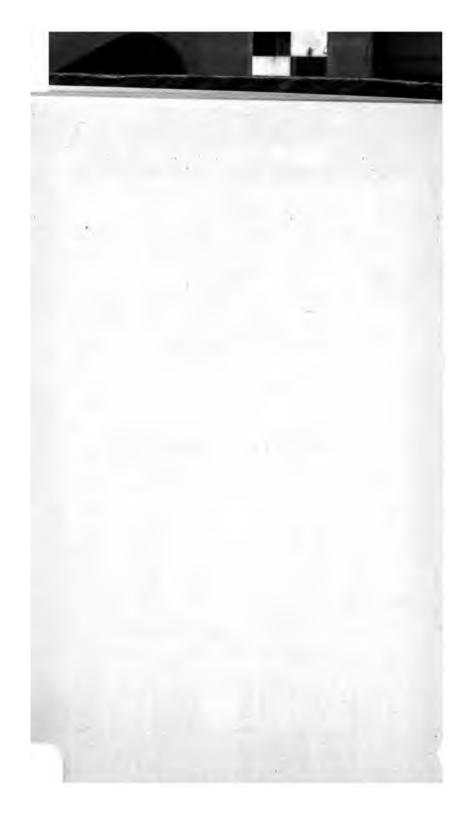
it raises the water itself in mighty waves and drives it along in clouds. That which is gentle, soft and yielding overcomes that which is harsh, stern and unyielding.

Even so in the life of men. If you would conquer, be gentle, mild and yielding.

10. In order to be strong, be like water. If there are no obstacles it flows freely; if it encounters a dam, it stops; if the dam be broken, it flows again; in a square vessel it is square; in a round vessel it is round. Because it is so submissive it is at once gentlest and strongest.



TRUTHFULNESS





TRUTHFULNESS

Superstitions are an obstacle to right living. Deliverance from superstitions is only in truthfulness—not only before others but also before self.

I.

What Must Be Our Attitude to Established Convictions and Customs?

- 1. One of the most common methods of denying the existence of God is always and unconditionally to accept public opinion as correct and never to heed that voice of God which is constantly heard in our soul. Ruskin.
- 2. Though the whole world accepted a doctrine as true, though it be ever so ancient, man must examine it in the light of his reason and boldly reject it if it fails to be in accord with the demands of reason.
- 3. "And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."

 John VIII, 32.
- 4. The man who acknowledges the divinity of his soul must examine in the light of his reason all the teachings which are accepted by people as undoubted truths.
- 5. He who would become a true man must give up pleasing the world; he who would lead the true life must refuse to be guided by that which is accepted as good and must assiduously search where and what is the true good. There is nothing holier and more profitable than the independent inquisitiveness of the soul.

 Emerson.
- 6. If a thing be true let us believe it: whether we be poor or rich, men or women or children. If a thing be untrue, let none of us believe it: neither rich nor poor,



130

neither multitudes nor individual men, women and children. The truth should be proclaimed from the housetops.

Some always whisper that it is dangerous to expose certain things to the majority of the people. They say: we know these things to be untrue, but they are necessary for the people. It is well for the people to believe in them and much harm may ensue if their faith in them is shaken.

No, crooked paths will always remain crooked, though they be designed for the deception of the vast majority of people. Falsehood can never do any one any good. And therefore we acknowledge only one law for all people: to follow the truth, as we know it, no matter where it may lead us.

Clifford.

7. Both good and evil mingle in our readiness to believe in that which is presented to us as the truth: it is this readiness which permits the progressive movement of society, and it is this very readiness which makes this progressive movement so painfully slow; thanks to it each generation receives without effort the knowledge' which is its heritage acquired by the toil of those who have gone before, and each generation thanks to it appears a slave to the errors and the superstitions of its predecessors.

Henry George.

- 8. The longer a man lives the freer he becomes of superstitions.
- 9. All superstitions are merely corruptions of thought, and therefore deliverance from them is possible only through applying to them the demands of truth as revealed by reason.
- 10. To believe in that which is profitable and genuinely agreeable to us in itself is a natural characteristic of children and of mankind in its infantile stage as well. The

longer man and mankind live, the more enlightened and certain the human reason becomes, the more man and mankind are released from the erroneous idea that all that is true which is profitable to man. Therefore every individual and humanity at large, as they progress in life, must examine in the light of their reason and of the wisdom of their predecessors all the statements regarding truth which are offered them as articles of faith.

11. All truths expressed in words form a force the effect of which is infinite.

II.

Falsehoods. Its Causes and Effects

- 1. Think not that it is necessary only in things of importance to speak and to act the truth. It is necessary to speak and to act the truth even in most trifling matters. It is not the degree of evil, greater or less, which may be the result of your untruth that is essential. The essential thing is that you shall never defile yourself with falsehood.
- 2. If life is out of harmony with truth, it is none the less better to acknowledge the truth than to hide it: we can change our life for the sake of truth; but we cannot alter truth at all, it will remain as it is and will not cease to convict us.
- 3. We all love truth more than falsehood, but in matters affecting our life we frequently prefer falsehood to truth because falsehood furnishes an excuse for our evil life, while truth exposes it.
- 4. In the case of every truth which passes into the consciousness of people and is clearly recognized, the truth which replaces it is obvious. Nevertheless those who either profit by or are accustomed to the delusion seek by all

132

means to sustain it. At such a time it is peculiarly important to proclaim the truth boldly.

5. If people tell you that it is not worth while in all things to strive for truth, because you will never attain perfect truth, do not trust such men and beware of them. They are the bitterest foes of truth and your own foes as well.

They speak thus only because their own life is not in accordance with the truth, and they know it, but they would have others live like themselves.

- 6. If you would know the truth, first of all rid yourself though for a season of all the considerations of your own gain from this or that decision.
- 7. It delights you to discover the untruth of others and to expose it, but how much more ought it to delight you if you detect yourself in an untruth and expose yourself. Endeavor to afford yourself this delight as frequently as possible.
- 8. Be falsehood with its temptations never so enticing, a time comes when it overwhelms a man with such agonies that he turns to truth not because of a thirst for truth, but merely to escape falsehood and the inevitable tissue of suffering resulting from it, and in truth alone he finds his salvation.
- 9. What is the cloud that has enveloped the world? Why is there no light in it? What defiles it? Wherein is its great peril?

Its peril is in the fact that men do not live by the divine reason which has been given them, but by that common and corrupted reason which has been amassed among them for the justification of their passions. Men suffer and seek salvation. What then will save them. Only respecting their reason and following after truth.

From Oriental sources.

- 10. Bitter experience shows that we cannot adhere to former conditions of life and must therefore find new conditions suitable to modern needs; but instead of using their reason for the determination and the establishment of these conditions they employ their reason to detain life in the condition which characterized it centuries back.
- 11. Falsehood hides from us the spirit of God that dwelleth in us and in others, and therefore there is nothing more precious than truth which brings us back to the love of God and of our neighbors.
- 12. There is no greater misfortune than when man begins to avoid truth for fear it will show him how bad he is.

 Pascal.
- 13. The most certain mark of the truth is simplicity and clearness. Falsehood is always complex, fanciful and verbose.
- 14. It is possible to be lonely in one's private temporary environment, but our every thought and sentiment will finds its echo in humanity. In the case of a few men whom the greater part of mankind recognizes as its leaders, reformers and illuminators this echo is tremendous and reverberates with exceptional power. But there does not exist a man whose thoughts do not produce a similar though correspondingly weaker effect. Each genuine manifestation of the soul, each expression of personal conviction is helpful to someone or in some way, even if you are not aware of it yourself, even if your mouth is silenced or the strangling rope is tightened around your neck. A word spoken to another retains its indestructible effect; like all motion it is indestructible but is merely changed into another form.

Amiel.



134

III.

On What Rests Superstition?

- 1. The greater veneration surrounds objects, customs or laws the more carefully must we examine their claims to veneration.
- 2. There are many ancient truths that appear to us credible merely because we have never given them any serious thought.
- 3. Reason is the greatest sanctuary in the world, and therefore it is the greatest sin to abuse it through employing it either to conceal or to corrupt the truth.
- 4. Surveying the history of mankind we observe every now and then that the most obvious absurdities passed among men as indubitable truths, that entire nations fell victims to the most savage superstitions and humbled themselves before other mortals, frequently before idiots or libertines. And the cause of these absurdities and sufferings has always been the same: accepting as an article of faith things that even infants could recognize as irrational.

Henry George.

5. Our age is the true age of criticism. Everything accepted as an article of faith is subjected to criticism.

Reason respects only that which is capable of passing its free and public test.

Kant.

6. Do not fear the destruction wrought by reason among the traditions established by men. Reason can not destroy anything without replacing it by the truth. This is its characteristic.

IV.

Religious Superstitions

1. It is bad if people do not know God, but it is worse if they acknowledge as God that which is not God.

Lactantius.

2. We have no more religion. The eternal laws of God with their eternal paradise and hell have been transformed into rules of practical philosophy based on adroit calculations of profit and loss, with a weak remainder of respect for the joys furnished by virtue and lofty morality. Using the language of our ancestors we have forgotten God, and making use of the modern method of expression we must say that we falsely interpret the life of the world. We calmly close our eyes and refuse to see the eternal substance of things and regard only their seeming and illusory appearance.

We calmly regard the universe as a gigantic unintelligible accident; judging by its external appearance it appears to us fairly plainly as an immense cattle pen or a workhouse with spacious kitchens and dining tables which have room only for prudent people.

No, we have no God. The laws of God have been replaced by the principle of maximum profit.

Carlyle.

- 3. God gave us His reason that we might serve Him; but we use this reason to serve self.
- 4. "Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts;

"Which devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation."

Luke XX, 46-47.

5. "But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.

"Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ."

Matthew XXII, 8-10.

6. Without purity of soul why worship God? Why say: I will go to Benares. How shall he reach the true Benares who has done evil?

Holiness is not in the forests, nor in heaven, nor in earth, nor in sacred rivers. Purify yourself, and you shall see Him. Transform your body into a temple, cast off evil thoughts and behold Him with your inner eye. When we recognize Him, we recognize ourselves. Without personal experience Scripture alone will not banish our fears, even as darkness is not dispelled by pictured fire. What ever your faith and your prayers, while there is no truth in you, you will not attain the path of blessedness. He who recognizes the truth is born again.

The source of true blessedness is the heart. He is a madman who seeks it elsewhere. He is like a shepherd who goes abroad to seek the lamb which is sheltered in his bosom.

Why do you gather stones and build great temples? Why torture yourselves while God dwelleth in you constantly?

The dog in your courts is better than a lifeless idol in your house, and better than all the demigods is the great God of the universe.

The light which dwelleth in the heart of every man like unto the morning star, that light is your refuge.

Vemana.

- 7. How strange is it that the world tolerates and receives from among the highest revelations of truth only the most ancient and those which no longer benefit the age, but belittles and even hates all direct revelation, all original thought.

 Thoreau.
- 8. The religious consciousness of humanity is not immobile, but changes continuously, becoming ever clearer and purer.
- 9. The correction of the existing evils cannot commence in any other way but with the exposure of religious falsehood and the establishment of religious truth by every individual in his own inner self.

V.

The Rational Principle in Man

1. What is reason? Whatever we define is defined by our reason. And therefore by what shall we define reason?

If we define all things by reason, by the same token we cannot define reason. Yet we all not only recognize reason, but recognize only reason without doubt and we recognize it all equally well.

2. The true worth of man is in that spiritual principle which we sometimes call reason and sometimes conscience. This principle rising above the local and temporal contains positive truth and eternal righteousness. In midst of the imperfect it sees the perfect. This principle is general, dispassionate and always contrary to all that is prejudiced and selfish in human nature. This principle imperiously tells each one of us that our neighbor is as precious as our own self, and that his rights are as sacred as ours. It commands us to receive the truth no matter how repugnant it be to our pride, and to be just no matter how unprofitable it be

138

for us. This same principle calls upon us to rejoice in love, in all that is beautiful, holy and blessed, no matter in whom we may find these qualities. This principle is a ray of the Divine in man.

Channing.

- 3. All that we know we know through our reason. Therefore do not trust those who say that we should not follow our reason. Those who speak thus are like men who would advise us to extinguish the only light which guides us through darkness.
- 4. We must trust our reason. This is a truth which we can not and must not conceal. We can not believe in God if we belittle the importance of that faculty through which we know God. Reason is that faculty to which revelation is addressed. Revelation could be understood only by reason. If after a conscientious and unbiased appeal to our best faculties a certain religious teaching appears to us to be contrary to and out of harmony with the main principles of which we have no doubt, we must decline to have faith in such a teaching. I am more convinced that my reasonable nature is of God than any book is an expression of His will.

 Channing.
- 5. Reason reveals to man the meaning and the significance of his life.
- 6. Reason is not given to man to teach him to love God and his neighbor. This has been implanted in the heart of man independently of reason. Reason was given to man to point out to him what is true and what is false. Man need only reject that which is false and he will learn all that he needs.
- 7. The errors and the disagreements of men in the matter of seeking and recognizing truth are due to nothing as much as to their distrust of reason; as a consequence

human life, ruled by customs, traditions, fashions, superstitions, prejudices, violence and all sorts of things excepting reason, takes its own course, and reason exists by itself. It also frequently happens that if use is made of thinking at all, it is applied not to the search and the propagation of truth, but to a persistent endeavor to justify and to sustain customs, traditions, fashions, superstitions and prejudices at all costs.

The delusions and disagreements of people in the matter of recognizing the one truth are not due to a difference in the nature of human reason or to its inability to point them to the one truth, but to the fact that they do not trust it.

If they had faith in their reason they would find a method of verifying the indications of reason in themselves and in others. Having found such a method of mutual verification they would be convinced that reason is the same in all, and they would submit to its dictates.

Th. Strakhoff.

- 8. Reason is one and the same in all people. Associations of men and their mutual influence one upon the other are based on reason. The dictates of reason—which is one and the same in all people—are obligatory to all men.
- 9. To the degree that a man is truthful he is divine; the invulnerability, the immortality, the majesty of the divine enter man together with truthfulness. *Emerson*.
- 10. Remember your reason having the faculty of life in itself makes you free provided you do not turn it to the service of the flesh. The soul of man, enlightened by reason, free from passions which obscure this world, is a true fortress and there is no refuge open to man which is more secure and inaccessible to evil. He who does not know



this is blind, and he who knowing this does not trust to reason is truly unfortunate.

Marcus Aurelius.

11. One of the principal duties of man is to allow that shining principle of reason which has been granted us by heaven to radiate in its full force.

Chinese wisdom.

- 12. I glorify Christianity because it expands, strengthens and elevates my rational nature. If I could not remain rational as a Christian I would reject Christianity. For the sake of Christianity I feel constrained to sacrifice my property, my reputation, my life, but no religion exists for which I would sacrifice that reason which elevates me above the animal and makes me a man. I do not know a greater blasphemy than to renounce the highest faculty given me by God. To do this is to oppose wilfully the divine principle which dwells in us. Reason is the highest expression of our thinking nature. It is in accord with the unity of God and universe and strives to make the soul a reflection and a mirror of supreme unity. Channing.
- 13. If a man did not know that he could see through his eyes and never opened them, he would be pitiable indeed. But still more is to be pitied the man who does not understand that reason has been granted to him so that he might bear all vicissitudes. With the help of reason we can bear all vicissitudes. Man endowed with reason will never in his life meet intolerable vicissitudes. Such do not exist for him. Yet how often instead of facing some vicissitude boldly we pusillanimously endeavor to avoid it. Is it not better to rejoice that God has given us the power to bear with equanimity that which happens to us independent of our volition and to thank him that he has put our soul under subjection

only to that which depends upon ourselves? He did not put our soul under subjection to our parents, to our brothers, to our body or to death. In his goodness he put it under subjection to one thing only, namely our reason—and that depends on us.

Epictetus.

- 14. Reason has been given us by God that we may serve Him. Therefore we must preserve it in all purity so that it may always distinguish the true from the false.
- 15. Man is free only if he abides in the truth. And truth is revealed by reason.

VI.

Reason-The Censor of Creeds

- 1. When a man uses his reason for the solution of such problems as why the world exists and why he lives in this world he experiences a sensation akin to dizziness or vertigo. The mind of man can not find answers to these problems. What does this mean? It means that reason was not given to man to answer these questions, and that the very fact of formulating these questions is an error of reason. Reason only solves the question how we are to live. And the answer is very clear: so as to do good to ourselves and to others. This is needful to all that is living, myself included. And the possibility of living so is given to all that is living, including myself, through the exercise of reason. And this solution excludes all questioning as to why and wherefore.
- 2. "Are we not right? Is it not necessary to keep the people deceived? See how savage and uncultured they are."

No, they are savage and uncultured, because they have been rudely deceived. Therefore first of all cease to deceive them rudely.



3. If God, as an object of our faith, is above our reasoning, it does not follow that we must neglect the activity of our reason and account it harmful.

Although the objects of our faith without a doubt are beyond the circle of our reasoning, reason has a vast importance in relation to them, because we can not possibly do without it. It has the functions of a censor which admitting from the domain of faith truth that is above our reason, in other words a metaphysical truth, still rejects all fictitious truths which contradict our reason.

But in addition to this affirmative function, reason has also a proper negative function in delivering man from sins, errors (which are excuses for sin) and superstitions.

Th. Strakhoff.

- 4. Be a light unto yourself. Be a refuge unto yourself. Hold fast to the light of your lamp nor seek another refuge.
- 5. "While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light." John VII, 36.

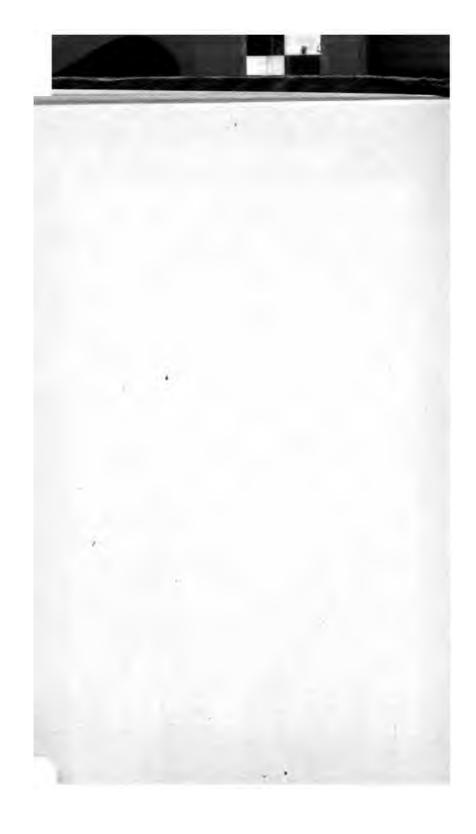
In order to know the true religion it is needful not to crush reason—as it is taught by false teachers—but to purify and to exercise it, to examine by its light all that is submitted to us.

6. If you would attain to the knowledge of the allembracing "I," you must first know yourself. In order to know yourself you must sacrifice your own "I" to the universal "I." Sacrifice your life if you would live in the spirit. Remove your thoughts from external things and from all that appears from without. Endeavor to keep away from yourself all images that arise so that they may not cast their black shadows on your soul.

143

Your shadows live and vanish. That which is eternal in you, that which has reason, does not belong to the evanescent life. This eternal principle it within you, transport yourself into it, and it will reveal unto you that which is false and all that which is true and all that which you need know.

Brahminic wisdom.





THE ILLS OF LIFE



THE ILLS OF LIFE

All that which infringes upon the happiness of our bodily life we call ills. And yet the whole of our life is a gradual process of delivering our soul from that which constitutes the happiness of our body. Therefore for him who comprehends life as it really is there are no ills.

T.

That Which We Call Suffering is a Necessary Condition of Life

1. It is a blessing to man to bear the misfortunes of this earthly life because this leads him into the sacred solitude of his heart, where he finds himself as it were an exile from his native soil, obliged to trust to no earthly joys. It is also a blessing to him to encounter contradictions and reproaches, when others think evil of him, though his intentions be pure and his actions righteous, for this serves to keep him in humility and is an antidote to vain glory.

These things are blessed mainly because they enable us to commune with the witness within us who is God, and we may commune with Him when the world spurns us, holds us in contempt and deprives us of love.

Thomas à Kempis.

2. When Francis of Assisi was returning with a disciple from Perugia to Porciunculo one bitterly cold and stormy day he discussed with his disciple herein consists perfect joy. He said that perfect joy is not in being praised of the people for virtues, nor in possessing the gift of healing the sick, making deaf to hear, giving sight to the blind, nor in foreseeing and foretelling the future, nor in fathoming the course of the stars and the properties of all plants

and animals, nor even in the conversion of all men to the one true faith. "Wherein is then perfect joy?" inquired the disciple. And Francis replied: "When we reach the monastery wet, filthy, shivering with the cold and starving and knock at the gate, and the gatekeeper asks: 'Who are ye?' and we say: 'Brothers,' and he should reply: 'You lie, you are vagabonds strolling over the face of the world, enticing the people, stealing alms. Get you gone, I will not let you in.' If then, benumbed with the cold and starving, we shall receive these words in humility and love and shall say to ourselves that the gatekeeper was right and that evidently God had put it into his heart to treat us like this, only then shall we know the perfection of joy."

Only receive every task and every injury with love towards him who imposes the task and does us the injury, and every task and every injury will be transformed into joy. And this joy is perfect because every other joy can be destroyed, but nothing can destroy this joy, for it is always within our power.

3. If some divinity offered us to eliminate out of our life all sorrows and all that causes sorrows our first impulse would strongly tempt us to accept such an offer. When burdensome tasks and necessities oppress us, when agonies of pain consume us, when anxieties wring our heart, we are bound to feel that there is nothing preferable to life without toil, life of rest, security, peace and plenty. But I think that after a brief experience of such a life we should ask that divinity to restore us to our former life with its toil, necessities, sorrows and anxieties. A life entirely free from sorrows and anxieties would prove not only uninteresting but intolerable. For together with the sorrows and the causes of sorrow, all dangers, obstacles and failures would disappear from life, and with them all effort and striving

and the excitement of peril and the strain of battle and the triumph of victory. Only the unhindered realization of plans, success without obstacles would remain. We should soon tire of a game of which we know in advance that we must win.

Fr. Paulson.

II.

Sufferings Stimulate Man's Spiritual Life

1. Man is the spirit of God clothed in a body.

In the beginning of life man is ignorant of this and imagines that his life is in the body. But the longer he lives the more clearly he realizes that his true life is in the spirit and not in the body. Man's whole life is in the increasing recognition of this fact. This knowledge is most easily and clearly attained through the sufferings of the body, so that such sufferings make our life such as it should be—a spiritual life.

- 2. The physical growth is merely a storing up of supplies for the spiritual growth which commences as the body begins to decline.
- 3. A man lives for his body and says: All things are evil. Another lives for his soul and says: No, all things are good. That which you call evil is the very whetstone without which my soul—the most precious thing that is in me—would be dulled and rusted.
- 4. All the misfortunes of mankind as a whole and of individuals lead, though indirectly, to the same goal which is set before man: the constantly increasing manifestation of the spiritual principle in each individual and in mankind at large.
- 5. "For I came down from heaven not to do my own will, but the will of my Father who sent me; and this is

150

the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing." This we read in John VI, 38-39. That is we must preserve, cultivate and develop to the highest possible degree that spark of divinity which was given us, which was entrusted to us as a child is entrusted to its nurse. And what is needful to achieve this purpose? Not the gratification of passions, not the glory of men, not a life of repose, but on the contrary, abstinence, humility, labor, struggle, privations, sufferings, humiliations and persecutions, even as many times stated in the New Testament. And all these needful visitations are sent us in all sorts of forms, on a small or on a large scale. Oh, that we knew how to receive them as needful and therefore gladsome tasks, instead of as annovances that trespass upon that animal existence which we mistake for our life and the improvement of which we count happiness.

6. Even if man could escape the fear of death and ignore it, the sufferings alone, to which he is subject, terrible, purposeless, utterly unjustified and inevitable as they are, would suffice to controvert all rational meaning that is ascribed to life—so say some.

I am engaged in a good and indubitably useful occupation, and suddenly I am stricken with disease, my task is interrupted, and I am suffering agonies without any sense or purpose. A screw in the rail is rusty and it happens to slip out just as a train is passing with a loving mother on board and her children are crushed before her very eyes. An earthquake must shake the very spot on which a city is founded, say Lisbon or Verny, and guiltless people are buried alive and die in terrible agony. Why all these things and thousands of other senseless dreadful accidents and calamities which strike terror into the hearts of people? Where is the sense of them?

The answer is that all these arguments are absolutely right for the people who do not acknowledge a spiritual life. And for such people human life indeed has no sense. But the fact is that the life of people who do not acknowledge a spiritual life can not be otherwise but senseless and calamitous. For if people who do not believe in a spiritual life only drew the logical conclusions which inevitably follow a merely material view of life, those people who regard life as a merely physical existence would not consent to live a moment longer. What laborer would consent to work for a master who when hiring the laborer would stipulate the right at will to roast the laborer alive or over a slow fire. or to flay him alive, or to pull out his veins and do all sorts of terrible things, just as he does without any rhyme or reason with his other laborers in full view of the man he would hire? If men really understood life as they claim to do, that is as a mere material existence, not one should consent to live in this world for very fear of these agonizing and inexplicable sufferings which he sees all around and which may befall him at any moment.

Yet they continue to live, complaining and wailing over their misfortunes and still keep on living.

There is but one explanation of this strange contradiction: in the depths of their hearts people know that their life is not in the body but in the spirit, and that their sufferings are always needful, are requisite for the happiness of their spiritual life. When men, seeing no sense in human life, revolt against sufferings, but still keep on living, it merely shows that asserting with their mind the materiality of life, they know in their hearts that it is spiritual and that no sufferings can deprive man of his true happiness.



152

III.

Sufferings Teach Man to Maintain a Rational Attitude to Life

All that which we call ills, all sorrows—if we only understood them as we ought—improve our soul. And in this improvement is our life:

Verily, verily I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

John XVI. 20-21.

- 2. The sufferings of irrational life lead us to acknowledge the need of rational life.
- 3. Just as only the darkness of night reveals the heavenly lights, so only suffering reveals the true purpose of life.

 Thoreau.
- 4. Outward obstacles work no injury to the man who is strong in spirit, for injury is all that which disfigures or weakens, though they might cause injury to animals as they are angered or weakened by obstacles; but the man who meets with the strength of the spirit which is given to him finds only added moral beauty and strength in all obstacles.

 Marcus Aurelius.
- 5. He who is young and inexperienced does not know that which older men learn by experience, he does not know that all that which we call sorrow is a genuine good, that it is a trial to prove how firm we are in that which we know

and confess. And if we are not firm, trials are needed to make us firm.

- 6. Only after an experience of suffering have I discovered the close kinship of human souls with one another. No sooner have you had your full share of suffering than all those who suffer become intelligible to you. But more than that: your mind clears: circumstances and achievements of people hitherto hidden to you become manifest and you see clearly what is needful to each. Great is God who enlightens us. Enlightens us with what? With the very sorrows from which we would flee and hide. In sorrow and suffering it is given to us to seek out the grains of wisdom that cannot be found in any book.

 Gogol.
- 7. If God gave us teachers of whom we knew for a certainty that they were sent of God himself, we should obey them freely and gladly.

But we have such instructors in necessity and in all the vicissitudes of life.

Pascal.

- 8. Not only is every visitation of Providence profitable to every creature, but it is profitable at the very time when it is sent.

 Marcus Aurelius
- 9. The man who does not realize the beneficial nature of suffering has not commenced to live the life of reason, the true life.
- 10. I pray God to free me from suffering which troubles me. But this suffering was sent to me by God to deliver me from evil. The master uses his whip on an animal to drive it from a burning inclosure and to save it, but the animal prays to escape the lash!
- 11. That which we regard as our misfortune is mostly good which we have not yet comprehended.

154

IV.

Sicknesses are Not a Hindrance But a Help to True Life

1. Life consists in transforming the animal within us more and more into a spiritual being. And that which we call ills is requisite for this purpose. Only by the things which we call ills—griefs, sicknesses, sufferings—do we learn to transform our animal self into the spiritual.

The mere fact, well known to us all, that those who succeed in all the things of life, those who are always well and rich, who know no injuries or humiliations, are frequently so weak and mostly so very wicked, shows how necessary are trials to man. And yet we complain when it is our lot to bear them!

- 2. We call suffering a misfortune, but if there were no suffering, man would not know where he ends and where that commences which is not himself.
- 3. When we feel weakest in body, we can be strongest in spirit.

 Lucy Mallory.
- 4. There is no sickness which could prevent us from fulfilling the duty of man. If you cannot serve your neighbor by toiling serve him by the example of bearing your suffering with love.
- 5. Illness attacks every man and he must take heed not so much how to cure himself as how to live best in the circumstances in which he finds himself.
- 6. There is a story about a man who was punished for his sins by being denied death. It may be boldly stated that if man were punished by being incapable of suffering, this punishment would be still more severe.
- 7. It is wrong to conceal from a sick man that he may die of his sickness. On the contrary, he should be reminded

- of it. By concealing this fact from him, we deprive him of that blessing which illness can give him in stimulating him through the consciousness of approaching death to an increased effort towards the apprehension of spiritual life.
- 8. Fire destroys and gives comfort through warmth. Even so it is with sickness. When a man in good health tries to live well, he does so with an effort. But in the case of a sick man the burden of worldly temptations is lightened, and the task is made easy, and it is even awesome to think how this burden will return in fullness and will oppress us again as soon as the sickness is past.
- 9. The worse a man feels in his body, the better off he is in spirit. And therefore man can not be badly off. The spiritual and the physical are like a pair of scales: the heavier the physical, the higher rises the spiritual and the better it is with the soul, and vice versa.
- 10. "Senility, second childhood, is the decay of consciousness and of the life of man"—so say some.

I call to my mind the picture of St. John the Divine, who, according to the tradition, passed into a state of senility, into second childhood. Tradition relates that he only repeated these words: "Brethren, love one another!"

A centenarian, barely able to creep about, with watering eyes, mumbling forever these three words: "Love one another!" In such a man physical existence is the faintest glimmer, it is all swallowed up by a new attitude to the world, by a new living creature that no longer can be bound in the envelope of the existence of carnal man.

The man who knows life for what it truly is cannot speak of a decrease in life through sickness or old age, cannot grieve over it, any more than the man who approaches the light can grieve over the lessening of his shadow in proportion to his approach to the light.



156

V.

So-called Ills are Only Our Own Errors

- 1. If anything disagreeable occurs to us, we mostly blame either our fate or other people. We do not realize that if either fate or other people can cause us any ill, then there is something wrong with us. He who lives for his soul cannot suffer any ill from any person or any thing: persecutions, injuries, poverty and sickness are as nothing to such a man.

 Epictetus.
- 2. Sufferings are particularly hard to bear for him who having set himself apart from the world fails to see the sins through which he brought suffering into the world and therefore considers himself blameless.
- 3. Ills exist only within us, that is they exist in a place whence they can be removed.
- 4. Frequently a superficial man meditating over the calamities which so oppress the human race loses hope in the possibility of improvement in life and experiences a feeling of dissatisfaction with Providence which rules the world. This is a grievous error. To be satisfied with Providence (though it set before us right now the most difficult path in life) is in the highest degree important not only that we may not lose courage amid the difficulties of life, but principally that we may not, shifting the blame upon fate, lose sight of our own guilt, which is the sole cause of all ills.

Kant.

5. Hopeless is the state of the man who in his misfortunes reproaches his fate instead of himself, affirming thereby his own self-satisfaction.

"We should be kind and gentle, if we were not irritated. We should be pious, if we were not so busy. I should be patient, if I were well. I should astonish the world, if I were only known."

If we cannot improve and sanctify the circumstances in which we find ourselves, we shall not improve and sanctify any other circumstances.

The difficulties of our state are given us in order that we may smooth them over and overcome them with our goodness and firmness; the darkness of our state is given us in order that we may lighten it with the divine light of inner spiritual labors; griefs, in order that we may patiently and trustingly bear them; danger, that we may manifest our courage; temptations, that we may overcome them with our faith.

Martineau.

6. Man may escape the calamities which are the visitations of God, but there is no escape from those calamities which he visits upon himself through his evil life.

VI.

The Recognition of the Beneficial Nature of Sufferings Destroys Their Oppressiveness

1. What are we to do when all things leave us: health, joy, affections, freshness of feelings, memory, capacity for work, when it seems to us that the sun is growing chill and life loses all its charms? What are we to do when hope seems lost? Shall we stupefy ourselves or grow hardened? The answer is always the same: live the life of the spirit without arresting its growth. Let come what may, if you but feel that your conscience is calm, that you are doing that which your spirituality demands. Be what you should be, leave the rest to God. And even if there were no good and holy God, spiritual life would still be the solution of mys-

teries and the pole star for the progress of humanity, for it alone gives true happiness.

Amiel.

- 2. Seek in sufferings their significance for the growth of your soul and bitterness of sufferings will vanish.
- 3. Only know and believe that whatever happens to you leads you to your true spiritual happiness, and you will meet sickness, poverty, disgrace—all that which people regard as misfortunes—not as misfortunes, but as things necessary for your wellbeing, just as the farmer accepts the rain of which his fields are in need though it drench him to the skin, or as the patient swallows a bitter medicine.
- 4. Remember that it is the distinguishing characteristic of rational beings to submit to their fate of a free will, but the shameful revolt against it is a characteristic of beasts.

Marcus Aurelius.

- 5. The very thing that aggrieves us and appears to us as a hindrance to our accomplishing the task of our life, is in itself the task of our life. You are beset with poverty, slanders, humiliation. You need only pity yourself a little, and you will be the most wretched of men. And you need only realize that the task of life to which you are called is to live the best life, possible in spite of poverty, sickness and humiliations, and you will immediately gather courage and confidence in place of despondence and despair.
- 6. Each one of us has his cross and his yoke, not in the sense of a burden, but in the sense of a purpose in life, and if we do not look upon our cross as a burden, we find it easy to bear; we find it easy to bear of we are meek, obedient, humble of heart. And still more easy if we deny ourselves; and still more easy if we bear this cross every hour as Christ teaches us; and still more and more easy if we forget ourselves in spiritual labor, even as people forget themselves

in the cares of the world. The cross that is given to us to bear is the one thing on which we must labor. If the cross be sickness, bear it obediently; if it be the insults of people, know how to render good for evil; if it be humiliation, humble thyself; if it be death, receive it thankfully.

- 7. The more you repel your cross, the heavier it becomes.

 Amiel.
- 8. It is beyond dispute more important how a man receives his fate than what it really is.

 Humboldt.
 - 9. No sorrow is as great as the fear of it.
- 10. An obstreperous horse, instead of pulling the vehicle to which it is harnessed, balks and struggles and is whipped into the bargain, and in the end must do as the driver directs. Even so with man if he declines to bear sorrows as trials and regards them as superfluous ills and balks against them.
- 11. If you have an enemy and can take advantage of him in order to learn on him how to love your enemies, that which you regard an evil will become a great blessing to you.
- 12. Sickness, loss of limbs, severe disappointments, loss of property, loss of friends—all these seem at first irreparable losses. But the lapse of years reveals the depth of healing power which lies in such losses.
- 13. When you regard yourself unhappy, remember the misfortunes of others and also the fact that things might be worse. Also remember the things of which you were guilty in the past and are guilty now; remember also that the things which you call misfortunes were sent you as a trial in order that you might humbly and lovingly bear misfortunes and thus, thanks to misfortunes, become better. And in this growing better is the whole business of life.
 - 14. In the difficult time of sickness, loss and other sor-



rows, more than at any other time, you are in need of prayer: not prayer for deliverance, but in recognition of your dependence upon a higher will. "Not my will, but Thine be done, not what I will, but what Thou wilt, nor as I will, but as Thou wilt. My business in the circumstances wherein Thou didst place me is to fulfill Thy will." In difficult times it is most needful to remember that if things be hard, this difficulty is the task which is given me, and that it is just the one opportunity—which may not repeat itself—in which I may show that I really mean to do Thy will and not mine.

15. All that is great in humanity is accomplished only with suffering. Jesus knew that even He had to expect it. and he foresaw all things: the hatred of those whose power he came to destroy, their secret conspiracy and their violence. and the ungrateful treason of the very people whose sickness He had healed and whom He had fed with the heavenly bread of His word. He foresaw the cross, and the death, and that His own flock would abandon Him, which was even more grievous than death itself. And this thought never forsakes him, nor for an instant arrests Him. If his physical nature repels the cup, His firmer will receives it unflinchingly. And therein he gives an example that must be forever memorable to all those who would continue His work, to all those who, like Himself, will come to labor for the salvation of the people and for their deliverance from the burden of delusions and ills. If people would reach the goal towards which Christ is leading, they must follow th same path. Only at such cost can men serve men. would have people truly brotherly, you summon them obey the laws of their common nature, you fight against a oppression, all lawlessness, all hypocrisy. You clamor for the kingdom of justice, duty, truth and love to desceupon earth, how then should those whose strength is based on things of a contrary nature fail to rise against you? Can they let you, without a struggle, destroy their temple and build another—unlike theirs, not made by the hands of man, but an eternal temple the foundation of which is Truth?

Abandon this hope if you ever have been frivolous enough to cherish it. You will drain the cup to the last drop. You will be seized like thieves; false testimony will be sought against you, and against your own testimony they will rise up with the cry: He blasphemeth! And the judges will say: He is worthy of death. When this happens, rejoice. This last sign is the sign that you have performed the true and needful task.

Lamenois.

VII.

Sufferings Cannot Hinder the Fulfilment of the Will of God

- 1. Man is never closer to God than when he is in trouble. Take advantage of this in order not to miss this opportunity of approaching that which is the sole source of immutable blessedness.
- 2. How good is the ancient proverb that God sends sufferings to him whom He loves. For him who believes in this, suffering is no suffering but blessedness.
- 3. A rational man who has reached advanced years and feels that he cannot perform by his physical strength even an hundreth part of what he could, say, thirty years earlier, has little cause to grieve, even as he felt no grief or even took any notice at the age of thirty of being unable to do the things which he could do in the days of his childhood. He knows only one thing that all of him, healthy or ill, strong or barely able to move on, then and now.



162

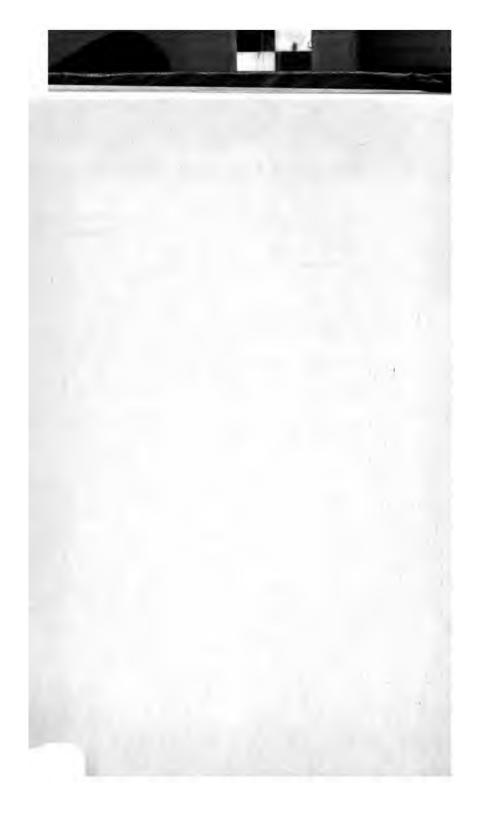
exists only for the purpose of serving God. And he knows that he can serve God equally well whether he be capable of lifting several hundred pounds with one arm, or have strength barely to nod his head. He now knows that it is only the service of his body which requires more health and strength, and that bodily strength is unnecessary in the service of God, and that on the contrary a feeble state of the body only stimulates the service of God.

The moment man diverts the meaning of his life from a striving after external blessings to the service of the Father, he no longer knows any difference between that which in worldly life is called good fortune and misfortune.

4. Only say to yourself that all things that happen are the will of God, and have faith that the will of God is always good, and you will fear nothing, and your life will be forever a life of blessedness.



DEATH





DEATH

If a man views life as the life of the body, his life ends with the death of the body. But if man views his life as the life of the spirit he can not even imagine an ento his life.

T.

The Life of Man Does Not Cease With the Death of His Body

- 1. The whole life of man, from his birth even unto his death, is like unto one day in his life from the moment of his awaking unto the moment of his falling into slumber.
- 2. Remember how sometimes after a heavy sleep you awake in the morning and fail to realize where you are, or to recognize someone at your bedside who is endeavoring to arouse you from sleep, and you hate to get up, as though you had not the power to do so. Then gradually you come to your senses, begin to realize who you are and where you are, and thoughts commence to get busy in your head, you get up and go about your business. Even so it is with man as he enters into life, gathers strength and reason and begins to do his work.

The only difference is that in the case of a man who was asleep and woke up, the process is a brief one, the thing of one morning, but in the case of the man who is born and grows up the process takes months and years.

There is also another resemblance between the life of one day and the life of man as a whole: When man awakes he settles down to work and is busy and as the day progresses he gathers more and more energy until noon, but after that he is no longer as energetic as he had been

166

during the morning. And towards evening he is still more tired and desires to rest. It is quite so in the life of man.

In his youth man is full of vim and lives merrily, in middle age he lacks the same vigor, but with old age comes weariness, and he longs more and more for rest. And just as night follows day, and man lies down to rest, and the thoughts in his head grow confused, and falling asleep he no longer realizes himself with his senses and goes off somewhere into the unknown, even so it is with the man who dieth.

Thus the awakening of man in the morning is a sort of a birth, the course of his day from morning until night a little picture of life, and sleep is death in miniature.

We know when we hear thunder that the lightning has already struck and that therefore thunder can not kill and yet we tremble at a peal of thunder. It is even so with death.

He who does not understand life imagines that with death all is lost, he fears death and hides from it just as the foolish person seeks to hide from the pealing of thunder, although thunder can not kill him at all.

- 3. If a man start from a place which I can see on a march towards a place where I can not see him any more, but another reach this latter place more speedily, I have no reason to assume that he who walked slowly has lived more than he who walked briskly. I only know one thing: that if one man walk past my window slowly and another hurriedly, they both existed before I saw them and will be after they pass out of my sight. Even so with the life of others before their death which comes to my notice, whether the life was brief or long.
- 4. Faith in immortality cannot be received from any one. You can not make vourself believe in immortality.

In order to have faith in immortality you must view your life in those things wherein it is immortal.

- 5. Death is a change of the envelope to which our spirit is joined. We must not confuse the envelope with that which is put into it.
- 6. Remember that you are not standing but passing on, that you are not in a house but on a train which is taking you do death. Remember that your body either crawls or speeds towards death, but it is only the spirit within you that truly lives.
- 7. Although I may be unable to prove it, I nevertheless know that the rational, free and incorporeal principle which dwelleth in me cannot die.
- 8. Even if I were mistaken in the belief that souls are immortal, I should still be happy and content with my error; and while I live no man has the power to rob me of this confidence. This assurance gives me peace and perfect contentment.

 Cicero.

II.

True Life is Apart From Time, and Therefore True Life Has No Future

- 1. Death is the dissolution of all those organs of association with the world which give us an idea of time. And therefore the question of the future has no meaning in relation to death.
- 2. Time conceals death. He who lives in time cannot imagine its cessation.
- 3. The reason why the thought of death does not produce the effect which it might is in that we being by our very nature active creatures ought not really even to think of death.

 Kant.

167

4. The question whether there is a life beyond the grave or not is the question whether time is the product of our method of thinking—limited as it is by our body—or a necessary condition of all that exists.

That time cannot be a necessary condition of all that exists is proven by the fact that we are conscious of something within us which is not subject to time. And therefore the question whether there is a life beyond the grave or not is really a question which of the two is real: our idea of time or the consciousness of our life in the present.

5. If a man sees his life in the present, there can not be for him a question of his life in the future.

III.

Death Cannot Terrify a Man Who Lives the Life of the Spirit

- 1. Death so easily delivers us from all difficulties and misfortunes that those who do not believe in immortality should greatly desire death. But those who believe in immortality and hope for a new life should still more ardently desire it. But why is it that the majority of people do not desire it? Because the majority of the people live the life of the body and not the life of the spirit.
- 2. Suffering and death appear only then as ills to a man if he accepts the law of his carnal, animal existence as the law of his life. Only when, though a human being, he descends to the level of the animal, only then suffering and death stare at him from all sides like bogies, and drive him from the only path of life which is open to him, which is subject to reason and finds its expression in love. Suffering and death are only the violation by man of the law of his life. If man lived a fully spiritual life, there would be neither suffering nor death in store for him.

- 3. Here is a crowd of men in chains. They are all condemned to death, and every day a few of them are led forth to be killed in the sight of their fellow-convicts. And these who remain watch these executions and await their own turn with dread. Such is life for those who do not realize the meaning of their life. But if man realizes that the spirit of God dwelleth in him and that he can become one with it, there can be no death for such a man and therefore there can be no fear of death for him.
- 4. To fear death is to fear ghosts, that is to fear something which does not exist.
- 5. I love my garden, I love to read books, I love to caress children. When I die, I am deprived of these things, and therefore I hate to die and I fear death.

It may be that the whole of my life is composed of such worldly desires and their gratification. If this be so I can not do otherwise than fear that which puts a stop to the pleasure derived from the gratification of such desires. But if these desires are transformed within me, being replaced by another desire—to fulfill the will of God, to give myself to Him in the form in which I now exist, and in all sorts of forms which I may assume—then to the extent that my physical desires are replaced by spiritual desires death appears to me no longer terrifying. But when my wordly desires are altogether supplanted by the one desire to give myself to God, nothing but life is left to me, and there is no death.

To substitute that which is eternal for that which is wordly and temporal—this is the path of life, the path to its blessedness.

6. The man who lives for his soul sees in the dissolution of the body only a release, and in suffering the necessary prerequisite of this release. But what is the state

of man who builds his life on his body when he sees that the one thing by which he lives, his body, is being destroyed and painfully at that?

- 7. The animal dies without seeing death and almost without experiencing any fear of it. But why is it given to man to foresee the end that awaits him, and why does it seem to him so terrible, why does it so rend his soul that men have been known to commit suicide for fear of death? I cannot answer why, but I know for what purpose: so that the conscious and rational man might betake his life from the domain of bodily life into that of spiritual life. This not only destroys the fear of death, but renders the expectation of death akin to the feeling of a wanderer who is returning to his home.
- 8. Life has nothing in common with death. Therefore perhaps there is always born in us the absurd hope which obscures our reason and compels us to doubt the certainty of our knowledge of the inevitableness of death. The life of the body strives to persist in being. Like a parrot in the fable it repeats even when being strangled: "That's nothing."

Amiel.

- 9. The body is like unto walls which confine the spirit and obstruct its freedom. The spirit unceasingly strives to sunder these walls, and the whole life of rational man is in pushing these walls apart, in releasing the spirit from the captivity of the body. Death is its final complete release. And therefore death is not only not terrible, but is a joy to man who lives the true life.
- 10. Man resists death, even as the animal, but thanks to his reason he can always substitute for this resistance not only submission but even assent.
 - 11. If death is terrifying, the cause is in us and not

in death. The better a man is the less he fears death. To a man of holiness there is no death.

- 12. You fear death, but think what would become of you if you were to live forever just as you are?
 - 13. It is as unreasonable to wish for death as to fear it.
- 14. If a man lives after being cured from mortal illness he is like a truck which has just been pulled out of a mudhole and left on the wrong side of it. It can not escape the mudhole as it must go past it again.
- 15. Rational life is like unto a man who bears a lantern attached to a long pole. He can never reach the end of the illumined portion of his path, for it always goes on ahead of him. Such is rational life, and only such life knows no death, for the lantern does not cease lighting the path until the last moment, and you follow it to the end as calmly as all through the journey.

IV.

Man Must Live by that Which is Immortal Within Him

1. The son lives permanently in his father's house, but the hired laborer for a season only. Therefore the son will not live like the hired man, but will take care of his father's house nor think only of his daily hire as the hired man will. If a man thinks that his life does not end with death he will live like the son in his father's house. But if life be just what it is in this world, he will live like the hired man seeking to make use of anything he can in this life.

And every man must first solve this question for himself—is he his father's son or only a hired laborer, whether he dies completely or only partly with the dissolution of his body. But if man realizes that though there is something in him that is mortal, there is also something that is im-

mortal, it is clear that he will also pay more heed in life to that which is immortal than to that which is mortal, that he will live not as a hired man, but as a son in his father's house.

- 2. Only he can believe in a future life who has established in his consciousness a new relationship to the world for which there is no room in this life.
- 3. Whether life ends with the dissolution of our body is a most important question to which we can not escape devoting thought. According to whether we believe or do not believe in immortality our actions will be either rational or irrational.

Therefore our principal care must be to solve the problem whether we do or do not completely die with the dissolution of our flesh, and if not, what is it in us that is immortal. But if we realize that there is in us something that is immortal, it will be clear to us that in this life we must care more for that which is immortal than for that which is mortal.

The voice that tells us that we are immortal is the voice of God who dwelleth in us.

Pascal.

4. Experience teaches us that many people familiar with the theory of a life beyond the grave and convinced of its truth nevertheless are given to vices and commit mean actions, inventing devices in order to escape through cunning the consequences of their actions which threaten them in the future. Yet there has hardly ever been a moral man who could reconcile himself to the thought that death ends all and whose noble mode of thinking did not attain a loftier elevation through the hope of future life. Therefore it seems to me that it would be more in harmony with human nature and good morals to base the faith in a future

life on the sentiments of a noble soul than vice versa to base its noble conduct on the hope of a future life.

Kant.

5. There is only one thing we know surely—that death awaits us. Like unto a swallow that flies across a room is the life of man. We come no one knows whence, we go no one knows whither. Impenetrable darkness behind us, dense shadows ahead of us. When our time comes what will it mean to us whether we ate delicate foods or not, wore soft raiment or not, left a large estate or none, bore laurels or suffered scorn, were considered learned or ignorant, compared with the question how we employed the talent entrusted to us by the Master?

What will be the value of all these things when our eyes grow dim and our ears grow dull? In that hour we shall know peace only if we not merely have unceasingly guarded the talent of spiritual life entrusted to out care, but ever increased it to such a degree that the dissolution of the body has lost its terrors.

Henry George.

6. From the testament of a Mexican ruler:

All things on earth have their limit, the most powerful and the most joyful fall from their majesty and from their joy and turn into dust. The whole earthly sphere is merely a huge grave and there is nothing on its surface that shall not hide in the grave beneath the sod. Waters, rivers and stream strive to their destination and never return to their blessed source. All hurry forward to bury themselves in the depths of the infinite ocean. That which was yesterday is to-day no more. And that which is to-day will be no more to-morrow. The graveyard is full of the dust of those who were animated with life, reigned as kings, ruled nations, presided in assemblies, led armies to battles, conquered new

lands, exacted obeisance, were puffed up with vanity, pomp and glory.

But their glory passed like black smoke issuing from a crater and left nothing behind but a mention on the page of the chronicler.

The great, the wise, the brave, the beautiful—where are they alas? They have all mingled with the clay, and that which overtook them will overtake us also: and it will overtake those that shall come after us.

But take courage, all ye famous chiefs and true friends and faithful subjects, let us strive toward that Heaven where all is eternal and where is no corruption nor dissolution.

The darkness is the cradle of the sun, and the splendor of the stars needs the gloom of the night.

Tetzkuko Nezagual Copotl.

(About fourteen centuries before the birth of Christ.)

7. Death is inevitable for all that is born even as birth is inevitable for all that is to die. Therefore we do not sorrow because of that which is inevitable. The former state of living creatures is unknown to us, their present state is manifest, and their future state can not be known—why then worry or be agitated? Some people look upon the soul as upon a marvel, others hear and speak about it with astonishment, but no one knows anything certain about it.

The portals of Heaven are opened to you just as far as you need. Free yourself from cares and anxieties and direct your soul to the spiritual. Let your actions be guided by yourself and not by events. Be not of those whose purpose in action is the hope of a reward. Be attentive, do your duty, abandon all thoughts of consequences, so that

it be a matter of indifference to you whether things end agreeably to you or disagreeably

Bahawad Hita.

8. You would be delivered from sins, and life by enfeebling your body and its passions assists you. This always gives you a longing to go ahead, to leave the body, a longing for separateness. Set your life upon deliverance from sins, and your ailments, all your bodily ills and death itself will be blessed.

You are growing feeble and old, your body is dying, but you are gaining spiritual vigor, growth and birth.

- 9. We are like the passengers upon some gigantic ship, whose master has a passenger list that is unknown to us and contains the destination of the passengers. Until we are put ashore what else can we do but obey the laws of the ship, live in peace, concord and love with our fellow travelers and thus spend the time allotted to us?
- 10. Does transformation terrify you? Nothing is accomplished without change. Water can not be heated without a transformation of fuel. Nourishment is impossible without a transformation of food. The whole of earthly existence is a transformation. Understand that the transformation which awaits you has the same meaning. that it also is necessary in the very nature of things. Take heed of only one thing—that you do not commit any act contrary to the true nature of man, but it is always necessary to act in all things in accordance with the indications of nature.

 Marcus Aurelius.
- 11. This would be a terrible world if suffering did not result in good. It would be a monstrous device designed for the sole purpose of tormenting people physically and spiritually. If this were so, this world that brings forth evil for no good future purpose, but idly and aimlessly, would

be inexpressibly immoral. It would seem to entice people designedly for the purpose of inflicting sufferings upon them. It chastises you from birth, it mixes bitterness with every cup of joy and renders death an unceasing threatening horror. And of course, if there be no God and immortality, the loathing of life shown by people would be perfectly intelligible. It is evoked in their hearts by the existing order, or rather disorder, by the horrible moral chaos, as we might properly name it.

But if there only is a God and an eternity ahead of us, all things are changed. We discern good in evil, light in darkness and hope dispels despair.

Which of the two suppositions has more verisimilitude: can we admit that moral creatures—human beings—could be put into the position of justly cursing the existing order of the world, while a way is open to them that would solve the contradiction? They are bound to curse the world and the day of their birth if there be no God or future life. But, if on the contrary, both exist, life becomes a blessing and the world a place of moral perfecting and of a boundless increase of happiness and holiness.

Erasmus.

12. Pascal says that if we saw ourselves when dreaming always in one position, but in waking hours in different positions, we should learn to regard dreams as a reality and reality as a dream. This is not quite accurate. Reality differs from dreams in the fact that in life we possess the capacity of acting in accordance with the demands of our morality; but in dreams we know that we frequently commit repulsive and immoral actions that are not characteristic of us and we cannot restrain them. Thus we might rather say that if we did not know a life in which we had more power of gratifying the demands of our moral na-

ture than in our dreams, we should consider dreams as the true life, nor should we doubt that this is not the real life. Now is not all of our life, from the day of our birth until the moment of death, even with its dreams, in its turn a dream vision which we merely mistake for reality and for real life, and merely fail to doubt its reality because we do not know the life in which our freedom to follow the moral demands of our soul would be even greater than that which we enjoy now?

- 13. If this tiny fragment of life is your all, take heed to make of it all you can.

 Said Ben Hamid.
- 14. "How can we live not knowing what awaits us?" say some. And yet only when we live without thinking of what awaits us, merely for the manifestation of the love within us, only then the true life begins.
- 15. It is frequently said: "What is the good of this to me, it is time for me to die." Whatever is no good to us because it is time for us to die, is no good to us anyway and should not be done at any time. But there is one concern which is always of importance, and the nearer we are to death, the more needful it is: it is the concern of our soul. And this concern is to bring betterment into your soul.
- 16. Love eliminates not only the dread of death, but even the thought of it. An old peasant woman remarked to her daughter how happy she was that she was dying in the summer time. And when the girl asked why, the dying woman answered that she was glad because it is so hard to dig a grave in the winter time and much easier to do so in the summer time. Death was easy for this old woman because to the last dying moment she was thinking of others and not of herself. Do the works of love, and there will be no death for you.
 - 17. Whatever business you undertake, be always pre-

178

pared to drop it at any moment. Gauge yourself to see whether you can detach yourself. Only then can you do well whatever you are doing.

The expectation of death teaches us so to act.

18. When you came to this world you wept, and all around you rejoiced. So live that when you come to leave the world all around you shall weep, while you alone are smiling.

V.

Being Mindful of Death is a Help to Spiritual Life

- 1. Since man has given time to meditation it has always been recognized that nothing so stimulates moral life as much as being mindful of physical death. But falsely directed medical skill has for its aim the deliverance of people from death, teaching them to hope for an escape from death, to banish all thoughts of physical death and thus depriving them of an important stimulus to moral life.
- 2. In order to induce yourself to do good give frequent thought to the fact that you must soon die. Picture to yourself vividly that you are on the eve of death, and you surely will not dissemble, deceive, lie, condemn, censure, feel malice or take the property of others. On the eve of death you perform only the simplest of good deeds: Help, comfort, and show love to others. And such acts are just those that are needed most and give most joy. For this reason it is well always to be mindful of death, particularly if entangled in the affairs of life.
- 3. When people realize that death has come, they pray and repent of their sins in order to come before God with a pure soul. But do we not daily die a little and are we not every moment on the brink of death? Therefore we ought not to wait for the hour of death, but be ready all the time.

And to be ready for death means to live right.

This is just the reason that death always hangs over men so that they may be at all times prepared to die, and preparing for death may live right.

- 4. There is nothing more certain than death, nothing more positive than that it will come for us all. Death is more certain than the morrow, than night following day, than winter following summer. Why is it then that we prepare for the night and for the winter time, but do not prepare for death. We must prepare for death. But there is only one way to prepare for death—and that is to live well. The better the life which we live, the less is the fear of death, and the easier is death itself. For the man of holiness there is no death.
- 5. How soon must we die! And still we can not rid ourselves of dissimulation and passions, still we cling to the old prejudice that the external things of the world have the power to harm us, still we fail to be gentle with all men.

 Marcus Aurelius
- 6. If you are in doubt and do not know how to act, picture to yourself that you will have to die before evening, and your doubts are dissolved: you see at once with perfect clearness what is the call of duty and what is mere personal desire.
- 7. In the sight of death all life becomes solemn, significant and truly fruitful and joyous. In the sight of death we can not shirk the task assigned to us in this life, because in the sight of death it is impossible to attend zealously to anything else. And when thus engaged, we find life a joy, and are freed from that fear of death which vitiates the life of those people who are not living in the sight of death.
 - 8. Live as though you are about to say farewell to

life, and as though whatever time remains to you is an unexpected gift.

Marcus Aurelius.

- 9. Live for an age and for a day. Labor as though you had an eternity to live, and act towards others as though you were on the brink of death.
- 10. The consciousness of approaching death teaches men to know how to bring their affairs to completion. And of all human affairs there is one only which is always fully perfected: it is present love.
- 11. Living oblivious of death and living in the full consciousness of approaching it closer every hour are two entirely distinct modes of existence. The former is akin to the animal, the latter to the divine.
- 12. In order to live without anguish we must have the hope of joys ahead of us. But what joys can be hoped for if ahead of us is only old age and death? What then should we do? Set the object of our life not in the blessings of the body, but in spiritual blessings, not in acquiring more learning, wealth, glory, but in acquiring more and more goodness, more and more love, more and more freedom from the body—and then old age and death will cease to be bogies and agony, but will become the very thing you long for.

VI.

Dying

- 1. We understand under death both the dissolution of life and the minutes or hours of the process of dying. The first, the dissolution of life, does not depend upon us, but the second, the process of dying, is in our power. Our dying may be good, or it may be bad. We must strive to die right. This is needful for those who survive.
 - 2. In the dying moments of man the candle by the

light of which he turned the leaves in his book of anxieties, illusions, sorrows and ills, flares up more brightly than ever, illuminating all that had previously been obscure, then it flickers awhile, grows dimmer and goes out forever.

- 3. The dying man understands the living with difficulty, but you feel that this difficulty of understanding that which is living is not due to the weakening of his mental forces, but to his beginning to comprehend something else, something that the living do not, can not understand, and this absorbs all his powers.
- 4. It is generally thought that the life of the very aged is of no consequence, that they are merely winding up their days. This is untrue: the most precious activities of life, most needful to themselves and to others, are carried on in the closing years of the very aged. The value of life is in inverse ratio to the square of distance from death. It would be well if all understood this, both the aged and those around them. But most precious of all is the last dying moment.
- 5. Before reaching old age I endeavored to live right. Having reached old age I endeaver to die right. In order to die right, one must die willingly.

 Seneca.
- 6. Do I fear death? I think I do not, but with its approach, or when meditating upon it, I cannot but experience a feeling of agitation akin to that experienced by the traveler who nears the spot where his train is to drop from some lofty height into the depths of the sea, or be taken up in a balloon to some dizzy height. The dying man knows that nothing unusual is happening to him, but only that which has happened to millions of others, that he is merely about to change his mode of travel, but he can not avoid a flutter of excitement when nearing the place where the change is to be made.



7. All things in life seem very simple; all things are connected with one another, are of one order and explain one another. But death appears something exceptional, some break in the chain of that which is simple, clear and intelligible in life. Therefore men for the most part try to give no thought to death. This is a grave error. On the contrary, life must be so harmonized with death as to give to life something of the solemnity and mystery of death, and to death something of the clearness, simplicity and obviousness of life.



AFTER DEATH



, Ser _

•

•

We are asked: "What will be after death?" There is only one answer to this question: The body will decay and turn into dust, this we know for a certainty. But what will become of that which we call our soul? To this we can give no answer, because the question "what will become" relates to time. But the soul is not of time. A soul was not nor will be. It only is. Without it, nothing would be.

I.

The Death of the Flesh is Not the Termination of Life, But Only a Transformation

- 1. When we die, only one of two things can happen to us: either that which we regard as our self will pass into another being or we shall cease to be separate beings and shall merge with God. Whichever happens, we have nothing to fear.
- 2. Death is a change of our body, the greatest, the final change. We have passed through bodily changes continuously, and we are forever passing through them: once we were naked fragments of flesh, then babes at the mother's breast, then we grew hair and teeth, then we lost some teeth and acquired others, then our beard grew, still later we turned bald and grey, but we have never feared any of these changes.

Why then do we fear this last final change?

Because no one has told us convincingly what will happen to us after this change. But if a man leaves us to go on a journey and fails to write to us, who can tell how he fares when he finally arrives at his destination? We can merely say that we have no news of him. It is thus

also with the dead. We know that they are no longer with us, but we have no reason to think that they have been destroyed or that they are worse off than they were before they left us. Even so the fact that we can not know what will be with us after death or what we were before we had life, proves only that it is not given to us to know these things, and that therefore it is needless for us to know them. We know only one thing—that our life is not in the changes of the body, but in that which dwells in our body, in our soul. And in the soul there can be no beginning or end, because it alone is.

3. "One or the other: either death is complete annihilation and disappearance of consciousness, or in accordance with tradition only a change and a migration of the soul from one place to another. If death is a complete destruction and consciousness and is like unto a deep sleep without dreams, then death is an indubitable blessing, for we have only to compare a night of such dreamless sleep in our own experience with those other nights and days filled with terror, anxieties and unsatisfied desire which we experience in sleep or waking, I am convinced few will find days and nights more blessed than the nights of dreamlessness. So that if death be such a sleep, I for one consider it a blessing. But if death be the passing from this world into another, and it is correctly related that we shall find there those wise men and holy who died before us, can there be a greater blessing than to live there in the company of these beings? I would long to die not once but a hundred times merely to be with them.

"Therefore I think that you, O judges, and all people, should not fear death but remember one thing: for a good man there is no evil either in life or in death."

Socrates.

- 4. He who sees the sense of life in striving after spiritual perfection can not believe in death, in the interruption of the striving after perfection. That which is on the way to perfection can not be destroyed, it can only be transformed.
- 5. Death is the cessation of that consciousness of life by which I now live. The consciousness of life ceases, this I see in the case of those who die. But what becomes of that which was conscious? I do not know, I can not know.
- 6. People fear death and desire to live as long as possible. But if death be a misfortune, is it not the same to die in thirty as in three hundred years? What joy can there be for the man condemned to die, if his execution is put off for thirty days, while his comrades are put to death in three days. A life that must terminate with death would be death itself.

 Scoveroda.
- 7. It is the feeling of everyone that he is not a mere nothing called into life at a certain moment by some other thing. Therefore the universal confidence that death may terminate life, but not by any means existence.

Schopenhauer.

- 8. Aged men lose the remembrance of recent events. But memory is that which binds all the things which occur in time into one "I." And in the case of the aged man this earthly "I" is done with, and a new "I" has commenced.
- 9. The more profoundly conscious you are of life, the less you believe in its destruction in death.
- 10. I do not believe in any of the existing religions, and for this reason I can not be suspected of blindly following any tradition or the influences of education. But

all through life I have thought as deeply as I could on the subject of the law of our life. I searched into it in the history of mankind and in my own consciousness and I have come to the unshakable conviction that there is no death; that life can not be other than eternal; that infinite perfection is the law of life, that every faculty, every thought, every striving implanted in me must have its practical development; that we have ideas and tendencies which far exceed the possibilities of earthly life; that the very fact that we possess them and can not trace their source to our feelings, proves that they proceed in us from a domain beyond this earth and may be realized only beyond it; that nothing perishes on earth but the appearance, and to think that we die because our body is dving is to think that the workman is dead because his tools have worn out. Mazzini.

11. If the hope of immortality be a delusion it is clear who are those who are deluded. Not those vulgar and darkened minds who had never approached this majestic thought, not the sleepy and frivolous people who are content with a sensual dream in this life and with the dream of oblivion in the future life, not those lovers of self, narrow of conscience and petty of thought and still more petty in love, no, not they. They would be right, and the gain would be theirs. The deluded would be all those great men and holy who have been and are venerated of all men. The deluded would be all those who have lived for something better than their own happiness and who have laid down their life to make others happy.

All these men deluded! Then even Christ must have suffered in vain yielding up his spirit to an imaginary father, and thought in vain that he manifested him in his life. The tragedy of Golgotha would then have been only

a mistake, and the truth in those days would have been on the side of those who then mocked him and cried for his death, and now on the side of those who are perfectly indifferent to that accord with human nature which is represented by this alleged piece of fiction. Whom are we to worship, whom shall we trust if the inspiration of the highest minds be a mere jumble of cunningly devised fables?

Parker.

II.

The Nature of the Change in Existence Which Occurs with the Death of the Body is Unfathomable to the Mind of Man

- 1. We frequently endeavor to picture death as a passing into something, but such an endeavor leads us nowhere. It is just as impossible to picture death as to picture God. All that we can know of death is that death, even as everything else that proceeds from God, is a blessing.
- 2. Some ask: What will become of the soul after death? We do not know, we can not know. Only one thing is certain, that if you are going anywhere, you must have proceeded from somewhere. Even so in life. If you came into life, you must have proceeded from somewhere. From wherever or whomever you have proceeded, there and to him you will return.
- 3. I do not remember anything of myself before my birth, and therefore I think that I shall not remember after death anything of my present life. If there will be a life after death, it will be such as I am unable to picture to myself.
- 4. The entire life of man is a series of changes incomprehensible to an observer, yet perceptible to him. But the beginning of these changes as culminating in birth,

and the end of these changes as culminating in death, are not even perceptible to observation.

- 5. Only one thing is important for me: to know what God would have me do. And this is clearly manifested not only in all religions but also in my conscience, and therefore my concern is to learn to fulfill it all and to direct all my powers towards that end, knowing full well that if I devote all my strength to the fulfillment of the Master's will, he will not leave me, and that only that will happen to me which ought, and that it will be well with me.
- 6. No one knows what death is, yet all fear it, regarding it as the direct evil, although it may be the greatest blessing.

 Plato.
- 7. If we believe that all that has happened to us in our life has happened for our blessing, we can not fail to believe that that which happens to us when we die will also redound to our blessing.
- 8. No one can boast that he knows that there is a God and a future life. I can not say that I know beyond doubt that there is a God and that there is immortality, but I must say that I feel both that there is a God and that my "I" is immortal. This means that the faith in God and another world is so closely knit with my nature that this faith can not be severed from me. Kant.
- 9. People ask: "What will be after death?" The answer must be this: if you truly say in your heart, and not merely with your tongue, "Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven," that is in this temporal life as well as in life beyond time, and know that His will is love, you need give no thought to what will be after death.
 - 10. The dying Christ cried out: "Father, into Thy

hands I commend my spirit." If He utters these words not with his tongue merely, but with his whole heart, what can man need more? If my spirit returns to Him from whom it has proceeded, nothing can happen to my spirit but that which is best.

III.

Death-A Release

- 1. Death is the destruction of the vessel in which our spirit was contained. We must not confuse the vessel with that which is put into it.
- 2. When we are born, our souls are placed into the coffin of our body. This coffin—our body—is gradually destroyed, and our soul is more and more freed. But when the body dies, in accordance with the will of Him who joined body and soul, the soul attain its complete release.

 Heraclitus.
- 3. Even as the tallow of the candle melts from the fire, so the life of the body is destroyed through the life of the soul. The body burns in the fire of the spirit and is entirely consumed when death comes. Death destroys the body even as the builders take down the scaffolding when the structure is completed.

The structure is the life of the spirit, the scaffolding is the body. And he who has reared up the structure of his spiritual life rejoices, when dying, because the scaffolding of his bodily life is removed.

- 4. We think that life ends with death because we account as life only the period from birth until death. Thus to think of life is to think of a stream that the stream is not the water therein but consists of the shores.
 - 5. Everything in the world grows, blooms and re-

turns to its root. To return to the root is rest in accordance with nature. That which is in accordance with nature is eternal; therefore the dissolution of the body hides no perils.

Lao-Tse.

- 6. When in the last dying moments the spiritual principle leaves the body we know for a certainty the body is being abandoned by that which has animated it and ceasing to be a thing separate from the material world combined with it. But whether the spiritual principle passes into a new form of life, with new limitations, or unites with that timeless and spaceless principle which gave it life, we do not know, we can not know.
- 7. He who has striven all his life to subjugate his passions, being hindered therein by his body, can not but rejoice to be released from it. And death is but a release. The process of self-perfecting of which we have spoken so much consists in the striving to dissociate as far as possible the soul from the body, and to teach it to collect itself and to concentrate within itself and independently of the body; and death gives this very release. Is it not strange that he who has been preparing all through his life to live as free as possible from the dominion of the body should be discontented at the very moment when this deliverance is about to be accomplished? Therefore, as much as I regret to leave you and to cause you grief, I can not but welcome death as the realization of all that I have striven for all my life.

Socrates' Farewell Address to His Disciples

8. Only he does not believe in immortality who has never truly thought of life.

If man be only a corporal being then death is the end of something so insignificant that it is not worth while to

regret it. But if man be a spiritual creature, and the soul live in the body only for a season, then death is merely a change.

- 9. We fear death only because we mistake for our true self the mere instrument with which we are wont to labor—our body. But if we only accustom ourselves to regard that as our self which directs the instrument, namely our spirit, then there can be no fear? He who regards his body as an instrument given him to work with, experiences at the moment of death only the consciousness of awkwardness which the workingman experiences when his accustomed tool is taken from him while the new one has not yet been given him.
- 10. Man observes how plants and animals spring into life, grow, strengthen and multiply, then weaken, deteriorate, grow old and die.

He observes the same process in other people, and he knows that the same will happen in his own body; he knows that it will grow old, deteriorate and die even as all things that are born and live in this world.

But besides these things which the man observes in himself and other creatures, he also knows something within himself that does not deteriorate and grow old, but grows stronger and better the longer it lives; every man is conscious of his own soul within him which can not fare as does his body. Therefore death is a terror only to him who lives with the body and not with the soul.

11. A wise man who affirmed the immortality of the soul was asked: "But how about the end of the world?" He replied: "In order that my soul may live, no world is required."



12. The soul does not dwell in the body as though it were at home, but as a wanderer in a strange refuge.

Hindu wisdom.

13. The life of man may be pictured thus: progress along a corridor or a cylinder, first free and easy, then due to self-expansion more and more crowded and difficult; as he moves onward he sees in the distance, but gradually coming nearer, the brightness of the free space beyond, and he observes those who precede him disappearing into the beyond.

How then feeling all the strain and pressure and impediment of his progress should he not long to reach the open space ahead of him? And how then should he, instead of desiring it, fear to approach this freedom?

14. The more spiritual our life becomes, the more we believe in immortality. As our nature departs from the uncouthness of the animal, our very doubts are gradually destroyed.

The veil is lifted from the future, the darkness is dissipated, and we feel our immorality right here.

Martineau.

- 15. He who has a false view of life has also a false view of death.
- 16. He who knows others is well-informed, he who knows himself is enlightened.

He who overcomes others is strong, he who overcomes himself is powerful. But he who dying knows that he is not destroyed is eternal.

Lao-Tse.

IV.

Birth and Death are the Boundaries Beyond Which Our Life is Unknown to Us

- 1. Birth and death are the boundaries in two directions. Beyond either there is an equal mystery.
- 2. Death is the same as birth. With his birth the infant enters into a new world, begins an entirely different life from the one in his mother's womb. If the infant could tell us what he had experienced while departing from his former existence, he would relate an experience similar to that of the man who is passing out of life.
- 3. I can not rid myself of the idea that I had died before I was born, and that in death I shall again return into the same state. To die and to come back to life with the memory of former existence we call a swoon; to awaken with new organs which must be developed anew we call birth.

 Lichtenberg.
- 4. We can look upon life as upon a dream, and upon death as upon an awakening.
- 5. When people die—where do they go? Probably there whence people come when they are born. People come from God, the Father of our life; all life has ever been, is now, and ever will be from Him. And all men return to Him likewise. So that in death man merely returns to Him from whom he issued. The man leaves his home, labors, rests, eats and amuses himself, labors again, and when he feels tired returns home.

Even so with human life: man proceeds from God, labors, suffers, is comforted, rejoices and rests, and after all his vicissitudes, returns home whence he came.

6. Did we not experience one resurrection from a state wherein we had known less of the present than in the

present we know of the future? As our former state is in relation to the present, so is the relation of our present state to the future.

Lichtenberg.

7. You came into this world not knowing how, but you know that you came into this world the possessor of that specific "I" which you are; then you walked along the path of life, and suddenly midway, half in joy, half in fear, vou balk and refuse to budge because you can not see what is "there." But you had not seen even this world into which you came, and still you came. You entered through the entrance gate, but refuse to pass through the exit gate. All your life consisted of going onward and onward in bodily life. And you marched on, hurriedly at times, and now you grieve because that is happening which you have been doing right along. You are appalled by the dreadful change which will take place in your body at death. But as great a change occurred to you also when you were born. and it showed no ill effects—in fact it turned out so well that you hate to part from your state.

V.

Death Frees the Soul from the Confines of Personality

1. Death is a release from the onesidedness of personality.

To this doubtless is due the appearance of peace and serenity on the faces of the deceased. Calm and peaceful is as a rule the death of a good man. But to die readily, willingly, joyfully is the prerogative of him who has renounced himself, of him who has renounced the life of personality, who abnegates it. For only such a man really and

not seemingly desires death and therefore neither requires nor demands a further existence of his personality.

Schopenhauer.

2. The consciousness of all that is confined within the body of the individual strives to expand its boundaries. Herein is the first half of human life. Man in the first half of his life manifests an increasing love of objects and persons; that is exceeding his own boundaries, he transfers his consciousness to other beings.

But love as he may, he can not leave his boundaries and only in death sees the possibility of their obliteration. How then should he in view of this fear death? The process is somewhat similar to that of the metamorphosis of a butterfly from a caterpillar. We are as caterpillars; we are first born, then fall into the sleep of a chrysalis. But we know ourselves as butterflies in the life to come.

- 3. Our body confines within its boundaries that divine principle which we call our soul. And these boundaries, like a vessel giving form to the liquid or the gas contained therein, gives this divine principle its outward form. When the vessel is broken that which is contained therein ceases to have the form which it had and escapes. Does it combine with other substances? Does it receive a new form? We know nothing of that, but we know for a certainty that it loses the form which it had in its former confinement, because that which confined it has been destroyed. This we know, but we can not know what happens to that which has been confined. We only know that the soul after death becomes something else, but what—this we have no means in the present life of judging.
- 4. Some say: "True immortality is only such wherein my personality is retained." But my personality is the very



198

thing that is most loathsome to me in this world, and from which all through life I have sought to be delivered.

- 5. If life is a dream, and death an awakening, then the fact that I see myself separated from everything in matter is a dream from which I hope to awake in dying.
- 6. It is only then a joy to die when you weary of your separateness from the world, when you realize the whole horror of separateness and the joy if not of uniting with all, then at least of escape from the prison house of separateness in this life, where you only rarely commune with others through the passing sparks of love.

One so longs to say: "Enough of this cage. Give me another relationship to the world, more appropriate to my soul. And I know that death will give it to me. And yet they try to comfort me with the assurance that even there I shall remain a personality."

7. Beneath my feet is solid ground, frozen with the cold of the winter, around me are trees of gigantic growth. above me an overcast sky; I feel my body; thoughts surge through my mind, but I know, I feel in every fibre of my being that all of these things—the solid and frozen ground. the trees and the sky, my body and my thoughts-are but accidents, that they are all the product of my five senses. of my imagination—a world created by myself, and all of this is because I form this and not a different particle of the world, because such is the form of my separateness from the world. I know that I have but to die, and all of these things will not vanish but change their form, like a change of scene in a theatre, where out of bushes and stones palaces and towers are formed. Such will be the transformation wrought in me by death, if I only am not totally destroyed, but pass into another being differently separated from the world. And then the whole world, remaining unchanged for those who are left to live in it, will yet be changed for me. The whole world is such and not different because I consider myself to be just such a creature and not a different one, just so separated from the world and not differently. And there is no end to the number of forms of separation of creatures from the world.

VI.

Death Reveals that Which Had Been Unfathomable

- 1. The longer a man lives, the more life reveals itself to him. That which had been unknown, becomes known. And so until death. But in death all is revealed that man can know.
- 2. Something reveals itself to the dying man in the moment of death. "Is that it?" This is the expression which we nearly always seem to read in the features of the dying man. But we who remain can not see that which has been revealed to him. It will be revealed to us also when the time comes.
- 3. All things are revealed, while you live, in the manner of a uniform ascent to higher and higher levels by regular steps. But when death comes, that which was formerly revealed suddenly ceased to reveal itself, or he who received the revelations ceases to see that which was formerely revealed, because he sees something new, something entirely different.
- 4. That which is dying is in part already a partaker of eternity. It seems as though the dying man speaks to us from beyond the tomb.

That which he says seems to us a commandment. We picture him almost as a prophet. It is evident that for him who feels life ebbing away and the tomb opening up be-

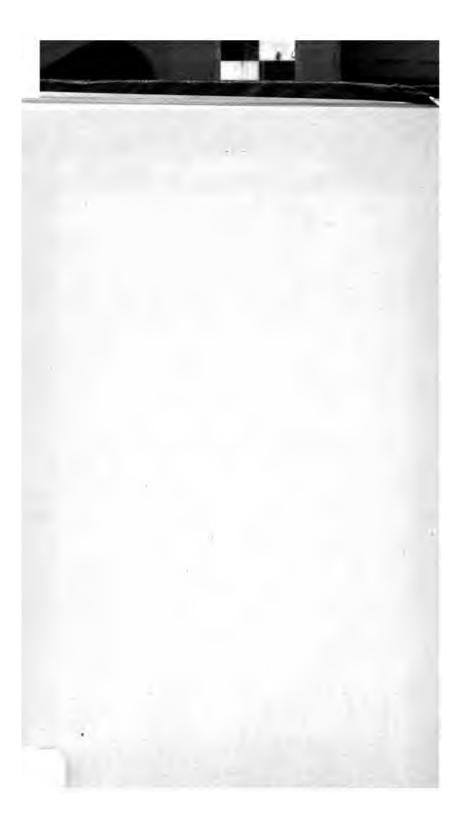
fore him the time of portentous speech has arrived. The essence of his nature must manifest itself. The divine principle that is within him can no longer remain in hiding.

Aniel.

5. All misfortunes reveal to us that divine, immortal, self-contained principle which forms the basis of our life. But the paramount misfortune—as people judge it to be—death—reveals to us fully our true "I."



LIFE IS BLESSEDNESS



LIFE IS BLESSEDNESS

The life of man and its blessedness consist in the ever closer union of the soul, which is through its body separated from other souls and from God, with that from which it is separated. This union is effected by the soul as it manifests itself through love and ever more frees itself from the body. And therefore if man realizes that in this release of the soul from the body lies his life and its blessedness, his life in spite of all misfortunes, sufferings or ailments can not be anything else but a state of uninterrupted blessedness.

I.

Life is the Highest Blessing Attainable to Man

- 1. Life, whatever its course, is a blessing than which there is no higher. If we say at all that life is an evil we only say so in comparison with another, an imaginary and better life. But we know no other or better life, nor can we know it, and therefore life, whatever its course, is the highest blessing for us.
- 2. We frequently despise the blessing of this life, anticipating a higher blessing somewhere else. But no such higher blessing can exist anywhere, for in our life we have been granted so great a blessing—the blessing of life—than which nothing is, nothing can be higher.
- 3. This world is no mockery, nor a vale of sorrows or transition into a better, eternal world, but this world, the world wherein we now live, is one of those eternal worlds which is beautiful and full of joy, and which we not only can, but must through our efforts make still more

204

beautiful and filled with joy for the sake of those who live with us and for the sake of all those who will live after us.

- 4. To make every moment of life the best possible, no matter whether it fall to our share from either hand of fate, dispensing favor or dispensing disfavor, therein is the art of living and the true superiority of a rational being.

 Lichtenberg.
- 5. Man is unhappy, because he does not know that he is happy.

 Dostoyevsky.
- 6. It can not be said that serving God comprised the whole destination of man. The destination of man is always and always must be his blessedness. But as God desired to give blessedness to people, they must, in striving for their blessedness, do that which God desires of them, and therefore obey His will.

II.

True Blessedness is in the Present Life and Not in the Life Beyond the Tomb

1. According to the false teaching the life in this world is an evil, but blessedness is attained only in the life to come.

According to the true Christian teaching, the aim of life is blessedness, and this blessedness is attained here.

True blessedness is always in our hands. Like a shadow it follows in the wake of a good life.

- 2. If paradise is not in your own self you will never enter it.

 Angelus.
- 3. Do not believe that this life is but a transition into another world, and our happiness lies only in that. This is untrue. We should be happy in this world right here.

And in order that we may be happy here in this world, we must only live as He desires who sent us. Nor must you say that in order that you may live well, everybody else should live well, should live according to God. This is wrong, live yourself according to God, make efforts of your own, and you will be happy, and others will also be better off rather than worse off.

- 4. The most common and the most harmful delusion among men is to think that they can not in this life attain all the blessedness which they desire.
- 5. Those who maintain that this world is a vale of sorrows, a place of trial, etc., and the other world is a world of blessedness, might as well maintain that the whole infinite world of God is beautiful, and that life in the whole world of God is beautiful, with the sole exception of the one spot and the one period of time, namely where and when we now live. That would be a strange phenomenon. Is this anything else but an obvious misunderstanding of the meaning and the calling of one's life?
- 6. Live the true life and you will have many adversaries, but even your adversaries will love you. Life will bring you many misfortunes, but you will be happy even in them and will bless life and cause others to bless it.

 *Dostovevsky**.
- 7. How odd and ridiculous to plead with God! Not begging of Him is needful, but to fulfill His law, to be as He is. The only rational attitude towards God is to be thankful to Him for the blessing which He bestowed upon me by animating me with His breath.

A master has placed his laborers into such a state that fulfilling the things he showed them they attain the highest blessing which their mind can conceive (the blessing of spiritual joy), and yet they beg things of Him.



By begging they show that they do not do that which was assigned to them.

III.

True Blessedness You Can Find Only Within Yourself

- 1. God entered into me and through me seeks His blessedness. What then can be the blessedness of God? Only to be Himself.

 Angelus.
- 2. A wise man remarked: I have covered the earth in my travels seeking blessedness. I searched for it day and night without ceasing. Once when I had despaired of finding this blessedness an inner voice told me: blessedness is in thyself. I obeyed the voice and found true and unchangeable blessedness.
- 3. What other blessedness would you, if God and the whole world be within you?

 Angelus.
- 4. Happy are the people if they call nothing their own but their soul. Happy are they even if they live among covetous and evil and hateful people, for none can take their happiness away from them.

 Buddhist teaching.
- 5. The better the people live the less they complain about others. And the worse a man lives the less content is he with himself and with others.
- 6. The wise man seeks all within himself, the madman all in others.

 Confucius.

IV.

The True Life is the Spiritual Life

1. That which we call happiness or unhappiness of our animal "I" is outside of our will; but the blessedness

of our spiritual "I" depends only upon us, on our obedience to God.

- 2. All that the people regard as misfortunes or ills is due to the fact that they consider only their material personality as truly existing: John, Peter, Mary, Natalie; whereas the material personality represents merely the boundaries in which has manifested itself the really existing eternal All. This is a delusion in the nature of the puzzle pictures in which figures are traced out of nothing between the contours of tress and branches. Man may regard that which is bounded by the body as himself or that All which in him is not bounded by the body. In the first instance he is a slave, powerless and subject to all sorts of misfortunes; in the second case he is free, all-powerful and knows no ills.
- 3. He who set the aim of his life on releasing his spiritual "I" from the body can not be discontented, because that which he desires is always accomplished.
- 4. The life of man, full of physical sufferings, liable to be interrupted at any instant, this life to avoid being the most cruel of mockeries must have such a significance that neither sufferings nor its duration—short or long—could affect the aim of life.

And such a significance pertains to human life. This significance is the ever increasing consciousness of God in self.

5. "My yoke is blessed." Men don a yoke that is unsuited to them and attempt to pull a load beyond their strength. An unsuitable yoke and an excessive load,—such is the life looking to the happiness of the body or to the material blessings for others. True blessedness is in the increasing consciousness of God in self. Only such a yoke is made to fit the strength of men and it is the one Jesus

208

speaks of. Try and see how pleasant and easy it is. He who would know whether I speak the truth let him try and do as I say, said Jesus.

6. Human life is a never ceasing reunion of the spiritual which is isolated by the body with that with which it is conscious of oneness. Whether man understands it or not, whether he wills it or not, this reunion is being unceasingly accomplished through the condition which we call human life. The difference between the people who do not understand their calling and do not wish to fulfill it, and those who understand it and wish to live in accordance with it, is in this: the life of those who do not understand it is a continuous suffering, but the life of those who understand their calling and are fulfilling it, is unceasing and increasing blessedness.

The former are like stubborn animals whom the master must drag by a rope attached to the neck into that refuge where the animal will find food and shelter. It is futile on the part of the animal to struggle and to choke itself in its efforts to resist the master: it will be taken to the place to which all must come.

And the latter are like the animal which having comprehended the master's will goes willingly and gladly where the master leads, knowing that nothing but good can result from obeying the will of the master.

7. Nothing proves so patently that the business of life is to perfect oneself as the fact that whatever you may crave besides perfecting yourself, be your desire ever so fully satisfied, the moment it is satisfied, the fascination of the desire is immediately destroyed.

Only one thing never loses its joyful purport: the consciousness of your striving towards perfection.

This incessant self-perfecting yields true, unceasing

and ever increasing joy. Every step forward along this path carries with it its own reward, and this reward is received immediately. Nor can anything snatch it away.

- 8. He who has set his life on spiritual perfecting of self, can not be discontented, for that which he desires, is always in his power.

 Pascal.
- 9. To be blessed, to have eternal life, to abide in God, to be saved—it all amounts to the same thing: it is the solution of the problem of life. And this blessing grows, man feels an ever stronger and deeper mastery of heavenly joy. And this blessing knows no limits, for it is liberty, omnipotence and the fulness of the realization of all desires.

Amiel.

V.

Wherein is True Blessedness?

1. There are few genuine blessings. Only that is a genuine blessing and good which is a blessing and good for all.

Therefore it is needful to desire only that which is in accord with the common good.

He who directs his activity towards such an aim will acquire blessing for himself.

Marcus Aurelius.

- 2. In the circumstances of people there is a combination of good and evil, but in their aims there is no such mixture: the aim can be evil—in the fulfilment of the will of one's animal nature, or good—in the fulfilment of the will of God. Let man yield to the first aim, and he can not but be unhappy; let him yield to the second, and there can be no unhappiness for him—all things are blessed.
 - 3. No one can do genuine good to another. Genuine

good a man can do only to himself. And genuine good is only in this: living for the soul and not for the body.

- 4. To do good—this is one occupation of which it may be said that it will assuredly benefit us.
- 5. A man asks aid of people or of God. But no one can help him, unless it be himself, for nothing but his good life can help him. And only he alone can do it.
- 6. They say that he who is doing good needs no recompense. True enough when you think of a recompense outside of yourself, of a future and not of an immediate reward. But without obtaining a recompense, without the good yielding joy to man, man simply could not accomplish any good. It is only essential to understand what constitutes a true recompense. True recompense is neither in external things nor in the future, but in the inner things and in the present: in the betterment of the soul. This is both the recompense and the incentive of doing good.
- 7. One man of holy life prayed thus to God: "O Lord, be merciful to the wicked, for to the good Thou hast shown mercy already. They are blest in that they are good."

VI.

In Love is Blessedness

- 1. In order to be truly happy only one thing is needful: love—to love all, the good and the bad. Love unceasingly, and unceasingly you will be happy.
- 2. We do not know, we can not know what we are living for. And therefore it would be impossible for us to know what to do and what not to do, if it were not for our longing for blessedness. This longing unerringly points out to us what to do, if we only view our life not as an animal life but as a soul dwelling in a body. And

this very blessedness for which our soul longs is given us in love.

- 3. No one has ever wearied of doing good unto himself. But the supreme good is to do that which the soul desires, and the soul desires only one thing: to love and to be loved. Make the object of your life to increase this love, and you will find that your happiness will be always in your power.
- 4. If there is a God of goodness and if He created the world, He must have created it so as to insure the welfare of all, consequently including also the welfare of us—human beings.

And if there be no God, let us of our own accord live so as to insure our well-being. And in order that it be well with us, we must love one another, there must be love. And God being love, this brings us back again to God.

- 5. My life is not my own, and therefore my own happiness can not be its aim; only that can be its aim which He desires who sent me into life. And He desires that all manifest love towards all others, which is the very thing wherein consists happiness, both my happiness and the happiness of all.
- 6. Man from the day of his birth to the moment of his death craves his own good, and that which he craves is granted him if he but seek it there where it is: in the love for God and for others.
- 7. Some say: "Why love disagreeable people?" Because there is joy therein. Try it and see whether it be true or not.
- 8. Nothing but death before us, nothing but duty in the present. How seemingly depressing and dreadful! Yet if you but seek the object of your life only in this: to strive for ever greater immediate communion in love with



212

others and with God, that which had seemed dreadful becomes supreme and inviolable blessedness.

VII.

The More a Man Lives for His Body, the More Surely He Misses True Blessedness

- 1. Some people seek happiness in power, others in thirst for knowledge—in science, still others in pleasures. These three ambitions have given birth to three distinct schools of thought, and all philosophers have always followed one of these three trends. But those who came closest to true philosophy realized that universal happiness—the goal of universal striving—must not be contained in any particular things which may be possessed by some few only, and which after being divided rather grieve their possessors because of the portion which has been denied them, than yield them joy in the portion which they possess. They realized that true blessedness must be such that all may possess it at one and the same time, without lack and without envy, and such as none may lose against their will. And such happiness exists: it is love. Pascal.
- 2. Why art thou scurrying hither and thither, O wretched man? Thou seekest happiness and hurriest somewhere, while happiness is in thy own self. Why seek for it at the door of others? If happiness be not within thee, thou wilt find it nowhere else. Happiness is within thee, in that thou canst love all, love all not because of anything, not for the sake of anything, but in order to live the life of all people, instead of living merely thine own. To seek happiness in the world and not to avail thyself of the happiness that dwells in thy soul is the same as to seek water

in some distant muddy puddle, while by thy side a healing spring of pure water spurts from the mountain side.

Angelus.

3. If you long for true happiness, do not seek it in distant lands, in riches or in honors, do not importune others, do not cringe before them or contend with them in order to attain happiness. By such means you might attain properties, or rank and all sorts of unnecessary things, but true happiness which is needful to all can not be bought, can not be attained by importuning, but is given freely. Know that all that which you can not take freely is not yours, is superfluous to you. That which you need you can always take freely—by your own good life.

Yes, indeed, happiness does not depend either upon heaven or upon earth, but solely upon yourselves.

There is but one blessedness in the world, and that alone we need. What is this blessedness? A life of love. And to attain this blessedness is easy. Scovoroda.

4. Thanks be to God because He has made so easy the things that are needful to men, and so difficult the things that are needless. That which men need most of all is happiness, and to be happy is the easiest thing of all. Thanks be to God

The kingdom of God is within us. Happiness dwells in our heart, if it is filled with love. How would it be if that happiness which all men need were the gift of some particular place, a period of time, of some position, of health or of physical strength? How would it be if happiness were to be found alone in America or in Jerusalem? In the times of Solomon? Or in a royal palace? In wealth, in honors, in a desert? In science, in health or in beauty?

Could the people live all in America or in Jerusalem?

214

Could all live in the same period? If happiness were in riches, in health or in beauty, how unhappy would be the lot of all the poor, the aged, the sick and the homely. Could God deprive all these of happiness? No, thanks be to God. He has made the difficult things superfluous. He has arranged it so that there is no happiness in riches, or in honors, or in beauty of the body. Happiness is in one thing only—in the goodness of life, and that is in every man's power.

- 5. Men pray to God to help them in the things that are outside of them, and God is always ready to help them in the things that are within them. Or else they would have Him help them as they desire, and not as He would help them.
- 6. To importune God for blessings in this ilfe is the same as to sit by the side of a spring of water and to pray to it for deliverance from thirst. Bend down and drink. The fulness of blessings has been granted us. We must only know how to make use of it.
- 7. If you will reckon that a blessing which is outside of yourself, you will be unhappy always. Realize that a blessing is only that which is in your power, and no one will be able to rob you of your happiness.

VIII.

Man is Only then Unconscious of the Blessedness of Life if He Fails to Fulfil the Law of Life

- 1. If you ask: "Why does evil exist?" I answer with the question: "Why does life exist?" The evil exists so that there may be life. Life is manifested in emancipation from evil.
- 2. If life does not appear to you a great and unmerited joy it is only because your reason is wrongly directed.

- 3. If the life of the people is not full of joy, it is because they fail to do that which is needful in order to make life a constant joy.
- 4. If we say that our life is not blessedness, we inevitably allow it to be understood thereby that we know of a higher blessing than life. And yet we do not know, nor indeed can we know any higher blessing than life. And therefore if life does not appear to us to be a blessing, it is not life which is in any way to blame for it, but we ourselves.
- 5. If any man says that though doing good he feels unhappy, it merely proves that what he considers good is not good.
- 6. Know and remember that if a man is unhappy, it is his own fault. People are only then unhappy when they desire something that they can not have; but they are happy then when they desire something that they can have.

What is it that the people can not always have though they desire it, and what is it that they can always have when they desire it?

People can not always have, though they desire them, the things that are not in their power, things that do not belong to them, things that others can take away from them—all these things are not in the power of men. But only those things are in the power of men which neither any man nor anything in the world can interfere with.

Among the first are all worldly boons—riches, honors and health. And the other thing is our soul, our spiritual perfecting. And just those things are in our power which are more needful than anything else for our happiness, because no worldly boons can give true happiness but merely always deceive. But true happiness comes from our efforts

216

to come closer to spiritual perfection, and these efforts are always in our power.

We have been treated as a kindly father treats his children: Only those things have been withheld from us which can not give us happiness. But all things that are needful to us have been granted us.

Epictetus.

7. A man spoils his stomach and complains of his dinner. Even so with the people who are dissatisfied with life.

We have no right to be dissatisfied with this life. If it seems to us that we are dissatisfied with it, it merely proves that we have good grounds to be dissatisfied with ourselves.

- 8. A man loses his way and comes to a river which obstructs his path, and he complains that he who sent him on his journey had deceived him; he wrings his hands in despair, leaps into the river cursing him that sent him and is destroyed, but he refuses to understand that on the road from which he had strayed there were bridges and all conveniences for traveling. Even so with the people who stray from the one true path of life. They are dissatisfied with life and frequently destroy themselves, because having strayed from the right path they refuse to acknowledge their mistake.
- 9. Do not think that failure to comprehend the meaning of human life and being perplexed thereby is either lofty or tragical. Such perplexity is akin to the perplexity of a man who drops into a company of people engaged in the reading of a good book. The perplexity of this man who neither will listen nor understand that which is being read but insists on annoying with his fidgeting people who are worthily engaged has nothing lofty or tragical in it, but is ridiculous, absurd and pitiable.
 - 10. A man who is unused to luxury and accidentally

finds himself in luxurious surroundings may pretend in order to raise himself in the estimation of others that he is so accustomed to luxury as not only not to marvel at it, but even treat it with disdain: even so a man who pretends to have a lofty view of the world and to disdain the joys of life, acts as though he is bored with life and can imagine something far superior to it.

11. There was once a benefactor who sought to do as much good to the people as possible and began to think how he could arrange it so as not to offend anyone and yet to benefit all. To give things to people direct would make it difficult to judge what to give to this and that one, who is worthy above his fellow, and how to even up things. Those who got less would complain, saying: "Why did you give to him, and not to me?"

And he conceived the idea of establishing an inn in some place where multitudes of people were wont to congregate. And in this inn he gathered all sorts of things that pertained to human necessity and pleasure. He arranged comfortable rooms, with convenient fireplaces, fuel, light, spacious barns full of all sorts of grain, vaults filled with vegetables, various fruits and beverages, beds and bedding, raiment and linen and footwear, enough for a vast multitude. This did the benefactor and departed, waiting to see what would happen.

And there came to the inn sundry good people who ate and drank and lodged, some a day or two, others a week or more, taking now a little raiment, or footwear, as they had need. And on departing they would bring all things in order just as they had found them, so that other strangers might use the conveniences, and passing on they only knew enough to give thanks to their unknown benefactor.



But before long bold, insolent and unkind men entered the inn. They looted the supplies and began to quarrel among themselves because of their loot. First they merely argued, then they fought and began to take things one from the other by force, destroying much property with malice, merely in order to deprive others of its use. And when they got so far as to ruin everything in sight they began to freeze and starve, suffering hurt one from the other, and before long they blamed the master of the inn for his poor arrangements, for failing to provide watchmen, or to store enough supplies, and for admitting bad people. But still others claimed that there never had been a landlord and that the inn had come about of itself.

And these men departed from the inn hungry, cold and wrathful, and all they knew was to curse one another and the inn and him who had built it.

Even as they who living for their body instead of living for their soul, despoil their lives and the lives of others, and condemn one another instead of themselves, or God, if they acknowledge Him, or the world, if they do not acknowledge God and suppose that the world came about of itself.

IX.

Only the Fulfilment of the Law of Life Yields Blessing to Man

- 1. It is necessary to be always rejoicing. If your joy ceases, seek wherein you have erred.
- 2. If a man is dissatisfied with his state he can alter it in one of two ways: either by improving the circumstances of his life or by improving the state of his soul. The first is not always in his power, but the second always is.

Emerson.

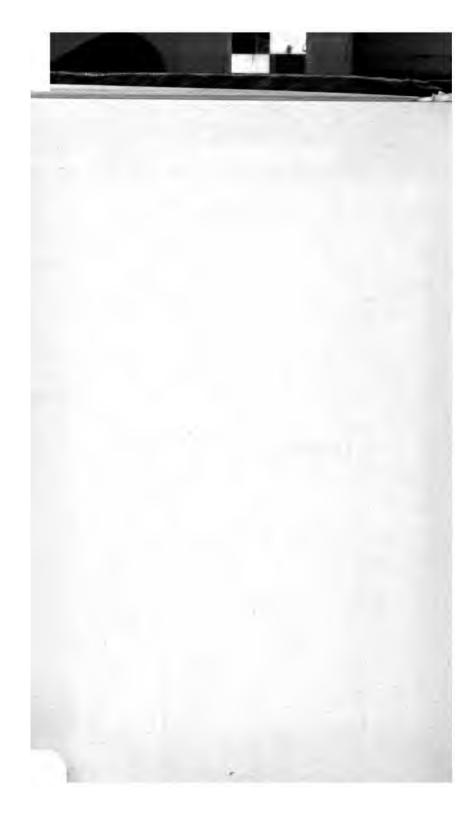
- 3. It seems to me that a man must make it his first rule to be happy and contented. He must be ashamed of his discontent as though of an evil action, and know that if something is wrong with him or in him, he should not tell others about it or complain, but rather correct that which is wrong.
- 4. The fulfilment of the law of God, the law of love which yields supreme blessing, is possible in every condition of life.
- 5. In this life we are all like horses that are being broken in and harnessed to a cart between shafts. First we struggle, longing to live to ourselves, we break the shafts and tear the harness, but we fail to escape and merely exhaust ourselves. And only after exhausting ourselves we forget our own will and submit to a higher will and start on our way, and then we find peace and happiness.
- 6. The will of God will be fulfilled in any event, whether I will or will not obey it. But it is in my power either to oppose this will and to deprive myself of the blessedness of participating in it, or to be its instrument, to make it a part of myself as far as it can find room in me in the form of love, to live by it and to have the experience of unceasing blessedness.
- 7. "Come unto Me all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. For My yoke is easy and My burden is light," says the teaching of Christ. The meaning of these words is that however troubled a man may be, however beset with griefs and misfortunes, he only need realize and receive in his heart the true teaching that life and its blessedness consists in the union of the soul with that from which it is separated by the body: with the souls of others and with God, and all the apparent ills



will vanish at once. If a man but set the object of his life upon uniting in love with all that is living and with God, his life immediately is changed from agony into blessedness.



DOING HIS WILL



DOING HIS WILL

God gave us His spirit, He gave us love and reason so that we might serve Him; but we make use of this spirit in order to serve ourselves, which is same as using the blade of an axe to destroy the handle.

The meaning of our life—its only rational and joyous meaning—is in serving God in His work, which is the establishment of His Kingdom, and in feeling that we serve Him. It may happen at times that we do not feel that we are serving, and we begin to imagine that we have slipped out from beneath the yoke, or that the traces have weakened, or this may be due to the fact that we have grown accustomed to the yoke, have worked ourselves in, as it were, and do not feel the work. At any rate though we may not feel that we are serving Him from any external sensations, if we but know in the depths of our soul that we have not refused to serve, that we have not cast off the yoke, we may rest assured that we are serving, and either our task for the time being is easy or our Master has granted us a brief respite.

To me the meaning of life is exclusively in serving God by delivering people from sin and from suffering.

There is but one fear—to try and guess the way which God may desire that we accomplish this, or to make a wrong guess or to anticipate, and as the result, instead of helping the work, to hinder or to delay it.

There is but one way to avoid such an error: not to undertake things, but to await the call of God — such a situation in which we cannot fail to act one way or another: either for God or against God. And in such cases to strain every effort of the soul in order to do the first.

Man strains his reason in order to ask "Why?" and

224

"For what purpose?" He applies the questions to his own life and to the life of the world. And his reason shows him that there can be no answer to them. These questions lead to mental dizziness and nausea. The Hindus give this reply to the question "Why?"—Maia had tempted Brahma, who had existed within himself, to create the world. But to the question "For what purpose?" they even fail to invent an answer as absurd as that. No religion has invented an answer to this question, nor can the mind of man conceive any answer.

What does it mean, then? Why it means that reason was not given to man to answer such questions; that the mere asking of such questions constitutes an error of reason. Reason finds an answer only to the basic question "How?" And in order to know "How?" reason, within the limits of the finite, also answers the questions "Why?" and "For what purpose?" But what do you mean by "How?" How to live. And how are we to live? Blessedly. All that is living needs this, including myself. And this possibility is open to all that is living, including myself. And this solution excludes the questions "Why?" and "For what purpose?"

But why and wherefore is blessedness not immediately granted to all? Another error of reason. Blessedness is in the working out of your blessedness, there is no other.

"But how can one live without knowing what will be; without knowing what form life will take?"

True life commences only when we do not know what will be. Only then can we do the work of life and accomplish the will of God. He knows. Only such activity is a testimony of faith in God and in His law. Freedom and life are possible only then.

The teaching of Christ became clearest to me, took the

greatest hold on me, when I realized that my life is not mine but His who gave it to me, and that the aim of life is not in me, but in His will, and that I must learn it and do it. This upset all my notions.

Picture to yourself that the woman you love promised to meet you in the evening. How shall you pass the day, how shall you prepare yourself for that meeting? Shall you not tremble lest you die, lest the world come to an end before that meeting takes place? Let but that meeting take place, and after that come what may.

This is what it means, "to desire." And it is in this way I should like to "desire" to do the will of God. So passionately to desire one thing, and one alone—its accomplishment. Is it possible?

Is it possible? Yes, it is possible. The only thing needful is to know clearly, to work consciously, to sacrifice.

May God help us never to cease rejoicing in the fact that nothing can ever or under any circumstances hinder our joy in the fulfilment of the will of God, if we only fulfill it in purity, humility and in love.

The true bread of life is to do the will of Him who sent us here and to accomplish His work. The will of Him who sent us and His work is in the first instance to do good works—as a slight tribute for the life that was granted us; and good works are such works as increase love in the hearts of men; and His work is to increase and to cause to grow that talent which was given us, which is our soul. And one cannot be accomplished without the other. It is impossible to do good works which increase love without increasing our talent, which is our soul, without increasing the treasure of love in it. And it is impossible to increase our talent, to increase the treasure of love in our soul, without doing good to people, without increasing love in them.

226

One depends on the other, one proves the other. If you are doing a work which seems good to you, but do not feel an increase of love in your soul, if the doing of it brings no joy to your heart, you may know that the work which you are doing is not good. And if you are doing something for your own soul, but the good for other people is not increased thereby, you may know that whatever you are doing for your soul is wasted effort.

Seek ye first the Kingdom of God and its truth, and the rest will be added unto you. Seek ye to be doers of the will of God, and outside of that nothing, nothing else. And all will be added: righteousness, and joy, and life, not to speak of food and raiment which are needless. There is but one thing needful—the daily bread, the food of life, that food of which Christ said: "my meat is to do the will of Him who sent me."

The doing of the will of God is the task of life; but wherein is the will of God? Is it necessary to do this thing or that thing in order to fulfill the law of God? To place yourself in this condition or in that? To give up your goods? To forsake your family? To expose people? To go to Nineveh or to Jerusalem? etc., etc. And there is no answer.

Neither the one, nor the other, nor indeed anything else is needful, no conditions, no actions correspond to the fulfilment of the will of God; not only do they not correspond to it, but they hinder it, for every act of your own will, every change of condition is a disobedience to the will of God. But the fulfilment of the will of God, and His Kingdom, are within you: the fulfilment is not in actions, but in obedience, in a lowly and meek attitude to the demands of the life in which you find yourself.

But you might say: The demands of life may be con-

trary to the conscience, or may be contradictory, or there may be no demands at all.

Only meet the demands, if they are contrary to your conscience, in meekness and lowliness, that is without boastfulness or anger, but in meekness and lowliness decline to fulfill them, or treat the demands which seem contradictory likewise in meekness and lowliness, turning your back upon your own will, facing God only, and the contradictions will be solved. But to say that there may be no demands at all—that is impossible. Though they be the merest needs of the body, these are also demands, and you can eat and sleep and house yourself in meekness and lowliness.

Indeed, the will of God is not in what you do, but in how you do it (what to do, our life points out to us), but how to do, that is which builds the true life of the spirit.

Thinking recently on the true business of a Christian, I saw it in doing the will of the Father. But what is the will of the Father? How to know it without making a mistake? For when you begin to think, "Is the will of God that I preach? or that I live in this or that fashion? or that I live with or without a family?" Once you begin to ask yourself these questions, you will never find out the will of the Father, you will only fall into doubt and confusion: why are we commanded to do the will of the Father?

This is how I think on this question: the will of the Father is shown to us very clearly, only we do not seek it where it is shown to us.

We always fancy that the will of the Father is in doing external things,—Abraham going to a foreign country, etc., but the will of the Father is for us to be meek

228

and lowly while we yet have strength in the yoke in which we are harnessed, to go without asking whither and why we are going, to stop when we are commanded, to start again when we are commanded, to turn when we are commanded, without asking where and why. "Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am meek and lowly of heart."

Be meek and lowly at heart, be content with all, assent to any condition, and you will fulfill the will of the Father. So in order to fulfill the will of the Father, it is not necessary to learn what to do, but to learn how to do that which you are called upon to do.

In order to fulfill the will of God, we must do His work. In order to do His work, two things are needful, and both of them together, not either one or the other separately: we need reason and love, we need truth and goodness. Reason must be loving, that is its activity must have love for its aim, and love must be rational, that is love must not be opposed to reason.

To illustrate the first, take the endeavors of science, the investigation of the Milky Way, the fine points of metaphysics, natural sciences, art for art's sake; to illustrate the second,—love for one woman only, or for one's own children or nation, which is love that has for its aim animal and not spiritual blessings.

The fruit of the activity of reason is truth, the fruit of the activity of love is goodness. But that there may be fruit, both forms of activity must coincide. Goodness will result only from rational love that is controlled by truth, and truth from a loving activity that has for its aim rational goodness.

I have not invented this, but I have seen it in life.

We all think that our duty, our calling is to do different things, to bring up children, or to make a fortune, or to write a book, or to discover a scientific law; but only one thing is needful—that our life be one complete, good, rational work; not a work before men, leaving behind a memory of a good life, but a work before God: offering yourself, your soul to Him in a better state than it has been before, closer to Him, more obedient to Him, more in accord with Him. It is very difficult to think this, even more difficult to feel this. One is so apt to stray towards desire for human glory, but it is possible, and it is needful. God help me, I have felt so at times, I feel so now.

One feature of the teaching of Christ which is closely allied with all the rest of His teaching, a basic principle in fact of His teaching that was entirely obscured, even lost sight of in His deification, is the teaching of His ambassadorship. Remember how often, from how many angles He refers to His doing the will of Him who sent Him, saying that He is nothing of Himself, that He is an ambassador, merging His life with Him who sent Him, that His life, the meaning of His whole life is in the fulfilment of his mission. Only the recognition of Christ as a peculiar being and not a man such as we are could conceal from us this basis of His teaching.

If my whole life consists in letting that light shine which is within me, that is if my life is in the light, then death is not only free from terror, but is a joy, because the personality of each one of us obscures that light which we bear. And physical death frequently brightens that light in which is centered our life.

The practical application of this is that every one of us must put all interests of his life into the task of bearing truth all through life, and into establishing it in others, and then we shall have no doubt or suffering, nor any idle



230

leisure. Every one of us is surrounded by people and can always fulfill the business of his life.

And to be always mindful of our dignity as ambassadors of God to whom is entrusted the accomplishment of His will! If I were the Tsar's ambassador to Turkey, how I should watch myself! And now being God's ambassador in the world—is that nothing? And a Tsar might be fooled, but nothing can be hidden from God.

Man is an ambassador, as Christ told us, yes, indeed, an ambassador. His only concern is to carry out his instructions, let them think of him what they will. Let them think evil of him: sometimes even this is necessary in order to carry out instructions.

My life is not mine own, it cannot have my wellbeing for its aim, it is His who sent me, and its aim is the fulfilment of His will. And only in fulfilling His will can I be blessed.

You know it; but it is so significant to me, so joyful to think of it, that I rejoice in every opportunity I have of repeating it.

The purpose of life is no more in the reproduction after our own kind—the continuation of the race—than in the service of man, nor is it in the service of God.

To reproduce after our own kind? What for? To serve men? And those whom we are to serve, what are they to do? To serve God? Can He not do that which He needs without us? Why, He cannot need anything.

If He tells us to serve Him, then it is only for our own blessing. Life cannot have any other purpose but blessedness and joy. Joy is the sole aim worth living for.

Renunciation, the cross, the sacrifice of life—all this is for the sake of joy.

And joy is and must be inviolate and constant.

And death is passing to a new, unfathomed, entirely novel, a different and a greater joy.

There are innumerable sources of joy: beauty of nature, of animals, of human beings, sources of joy that are always with us. Even in prison—the beauty of a ray of sunshine, the flies, the sounds. But the supreme source of joy is love, my love for people, the love of the people for me.

Beauty is a joy, but taken as a joy, independent of goodness, it is repulsive. I found this out long ago and abandoned it. Goodness without beauty is painful. The two must be combined, or rather than combined, beauty must crown goodness.

That which appears incontrovertible from the social point of view, appears senseless from the Christian point of view. This difference is due to the difference in the aims set before man.

The Christian teaching sets before us different aim from that which is set before us by social teaching.

The aim which the Christian teaching sets before man is not the happiness of this or that aggregation of human beings which is attained by the observance of the will and of the laws of this aggregation, but the supreme happiness of all the people and of the whole world is attained through the fulfilment of the will and of the law of God.

To live for self is agony, for it incites you to live for an illusion, for something that is not, and this is not only bound to lead to unhappiness, but is downright impossible. It is like dressing and feeding a shadow. Life can be only outside of self, in serving others, not in serving near ones and dear ones; this again is serving self, but in serving those whom one does not love, best of all in serving one's enemies.



It is true that Thy work and Thy strength are entrusted to me. Thy work is to manifest Thee in the world. And herein is all my life.

It is true that Thy strength was given me in order to accomplish Thy work. And Thy work is to increase Thy strength in me and in the whole world.

The true life of man is not in the flesh, but in the spirit. Many people are ignorant of this. And when they are ignorant of this, people fear that most of all which can injure their flesh—they fear death most of all. But when a man knows that his life is in the spirit, he has nothing more to fear, for nothing or nobody outside of himself can harm him.

In the essential problems of life we are always alone; the true story of our life cannot be comprehended by others. And the essential part of this story is in the extent to which we live either in the flesh or in the spirit.

Wherever your fate may cast you, you have with you always your being, your spirit, the center of life, liberty and power. There are no external blessings or grandeurs in the world for the sake of which it would be worth while for a man to suppress within him the consciousness of that spirit, to sever his union with it, to undermine the integrity of his soul by an inner discord with his own self.

Can you point to the treasure which you would have but at the cost of such a sacrifice?

Marcus Aurelius.

The will of God is not that I alone be happy, but that all be happy. And in order that all be happy, there is but one means open—for all to seek one another's happiness instead of their own.

If you ask any man who he is, no man can answer anything else but: "I am—I." And if every one is "I,"

then there is one and the same principle in all. And it is so in reality.

The life of man is a striving for happiness, and that for which he strives has been granted to him.

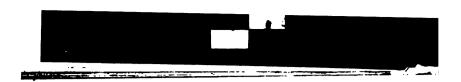
Man only then sees evil in the shape of death and suffering when he mistakes the law of his carnal animal existence for the law of his life.

Only when as a human being he descends to the level of the animal, will he see death and suffering. Death and suffering are the bugaboos which from all sides assail him with fear and drive him to the one path which is open to him—the path of human life subject to reason and manifesting itself in love. Death and sufferings are man's transgressions of his own law of life. For the man who lives according to his law there is no death or suffering.

"Come to me all ye that labor and are heavy laden and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart, and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light."

Matthew XI, 28-30.

The life of man is a striving towards happiness; that towards which he is striving is granted unto him; a life which knows no death, and a blessedness which knows no evil.



•



THE TEACHINGS OF JESUS

(Translated by Laud A. Maude)





THE TEACHINGS OF JESUS

Christ's Teaching

Last year I formed a class of village children, from ten to thirteen years of age. Wishing to impart Christ's teaching to them in a way they would understand, and that would have an influence on their lives, I told them, in my own words, those parts of the four Gospels which seem to me the most understandable, most suitable for children, and at the same time most necessary for moral guidance in life.

The longer I worked at this, the more clearly I saw—from the way the children repeated what I told them, and from their questions—what it was that they grasped most easily, and by what they were most attracted.

Guided by that, I composed this booklet; and I think its perusal, chapter by chapter, with such explanations of the need of applying the eternal truths of this teaching to life, as the reading evokes, cannot but be beneficial to children, who, according to Christ's words, are especially receptive to the teaching about the Kingdom of God.

I.

Jesus Christ showed men by his teaching and by his life that the spirit of God lives in every man.

According to the teaching of Jesus Christ, all ills come to men because they think their life is in their body, and not in the Spirit of God. That is why they quarrel with one another, why their souls suffer, and why they fear death.

The spirit of God is love. And love lives in each man's soul.

When people come to believe their life to be in the

238

spirit of God—that is, in love—there will be no enmity, no mental suffering, and no fear of death.

Every one wishes good for himself. The teaching of Christ shows men that good comes to them by love, and that all can have this good. That is why the teaching of Christ is called the Evangel. Ev means "good," angelion means "tidings"—good tidings. 1 John IV, 7, 12, 16.

II.

Jesus was born 1908 years ago, of Mary, the wife of Joseph.

Till the age of thirty he lived in the town of Nazareth with his mother, father and brothers; and when he was old enough he helped his father to do carpenter's work.

When Jesus was thirty years old, he heard of people going to hear a holy man preach in the wilderness. This man's name was John. So Jesus went into the wilderness with others, to hear John preach.

John said that it was time for the Kingdom of God to come, when every one will understand that all men are equal, and that no one is higher and no one lower than another; and that all men should live lovingly and in good accord with their fellows. He said this time was near, but would only quite come when people stop doing wrong.

When plain people asked him: "What am I to do?" John told them that he who had two garments should give one to him who had none; and in the same way he that had food should share it with him that had none. To the rich, John said that they should not rob the people. The soldiers he told not to plunder, but to be content with what was given them, and not to use bad language. The Pharisees and Sadducees, the lawyers, he told to change their lives and to repent: "Don't think," he said, "that you are some

special kind of men. Change your lives, and change them so that one may see by your actions that you have changed. If you do not change, you will not escape the fate of the fruit-tree that bears no fruit. If the tree bears no fruit it is cut down for firewood; and that is what will happen to you if you do no good. If you don't alter your lives, you will perish."

John tried to persuade all to be merciful, just, and meek. And those who promised to amend their lives, he bathed in the river Jordan, as a sign of the change in their lives. And when he bathed them he said: "I cleanse you with water; but only the spirit of God within you can make you quite pure."

The words of John, who said that people must change their lives so that the Kingdom of God might come, and that only by the spirit of God could men become clean, sank deep into the heart of Jesus. And to think out all that he had heard from John, Jesus, instead of returning home, remained in the wilderness. There he lived many days, thinking over what he had heard from John.

Matt. I, 18; Luke II, 51; III, 23; Matt. III, 1-13; Luke III, 3-14; Matt. IV. 1, 2.

TII.

John said that for the Kingdom of God to come, people must be cleansed by the spirit of God.

"What does cleansed by the spirit of God mean?" thought Jesus. "If to be cleansed by the spirit of God means to live not for one's body, but for the spirit of God, then the Kingdom of God would certainly come if people lived according to this spirit, for the spirit of God is the same in all men; and if all men lived by that spirit, they would all be united, and the Kingdom of God would have

come. But men can't live only in spirit, they must also live in their bodies. If they live for the sake of their bodies, serving their bodies, and making them their chief care, they will all live disunited, as they do now; and the Kingdom of God will never come. Then what is to be done?" thought Jesus. "To live only for the spirit is impossible, and to live only for the body, as worldly people do, is wrong; and if we live so we shall all live apart, and the Kingdom of God will never come. Then what is to be done? To kill one's body won't do; because the spirit lives in the body by the will of God. To kill oneself is, therefore, to go against the will of God."

And having thought this, Jesus said to himself: "It comes to this: We cannot live only in the spirit, because the spirit lives in the body. And we ought not to live only in the body, serving it as most people do. Nor can we free ourselves of the body, for the spirit lives in the body by God's will. Then what can be done? Only one thing: We can live in the body as God wishes us to live; but while living in the body we must serve not it, but God."

And, having come to that conclusion, Jesus left the wilderness, and went through the towns and villages to preach his teaching.

Matt. IV, 3-10: Luke IV, 3-15.

IV.

And the rumor of Jesus spread through the district, and many people began to come to him, to hear his words.

And he spoke to the people saying:

"You went out to hear John in the wilderness. Why did you go? One goes to see people dressed in fine clothes, but they live in palaces; there was nothing of that kind in the wilderness. Then why did you go to John in the wilderness? You went to hear a man who taught you how



to live a good life. What did he teach you? He taught you that the Kingdom of God must come, but that to make it come—and that there may be no evil in the world—it is necessary that men should not live separately, each for himself, but that all should be united, loving one another. So that to bring about the Kingdom of God you must first of all change your life. The Kingdom of God will not come of itself; God will not establish that Kingdom; but you yourselves must and can establish that Kingdom of God; and you will establish it when you try to change your way of life.

"Do not think that the Kingdom of God will appear in a visible form. The Kingdom of God cannot be seen. And if they tell you: 'It is there, or there,' do not believe them, and do not go after it. The Kingdom of God is not at any special time, or in any special place. It is everywhere and nowhere—for it is within yourselves, in your own souls."

Matt. XI, 7-12; Luke XVI, 16; XVII, 20-4.

V.

And Jesus explained his teaching more and more clearly. Once, when many people had come to him, he began telling them how men should live, so that the Kingdom of God may come.

He said:

"God's Kingdom is quite different to worldly kingdoms. Into God's Kingdom will enter not the proud and the rich. The proud and the rich rule now. They amuse themselves now, and everybody praises and respects them now. But so long as they are proud and rich and the Kingdom of God is not in their souls, they will not enter the Kingdom of God. Not the proud will enter the Kingdom of God, but the meek; not the rich, but the poor. But the



meek and the poor will only enter it if they are meek and poor, not because they were unable to become rich and famous, but because they would not sin in order to become grand and rich. If you are poor only because you are unable to get riches, you are like salt that has no taste. Salt is no use unless it tastes salt; if it does not taste salt, it is good for nothing, and is thrown away.

"It is the same with you: if you are poor only because you did not know how to get rich, you also are not fit for anything—neither to be poor nor to be rich.

"So, before all else, it is necessary to be in the Kingdom of God. Seek for the Kingdom of God and His righteousness, and you will have all you need.

"And don't think that I am teaching you anything new. I teach you what all the wise and holy men taught. I only teach you how to fulfil what they taught. And to do that, you must obey God's commandments—not merely talk about them, as false teachers do, but fulfil them. For only he who fulfils God's commandments, and by his example teaches others to fulfil them, will enter the Kingdom of Heaven."

Matt. V. 1-20; Luke VI, 20-26.

VI.

And Jesus said:

242

"The first commandment is this: In the old law it was said, 'Do not murder,' and, 'He who murders is a sinner.'

"But I tell you that if a man is angry with his brother, he is a sinner before God; and he is a yet greater sinner if he says a rude word of abuse to his brother. So, if you begin to pray, and remember that you are angry with your brother, first go and make it up with him, or if for any reason you cannot do that, put away the anger against him that is in your heart.

"This is the first commandment.

"Another commandment is this: The old law said, 'Do not commit adultery, and if you separate from your wife, give her a letter of divorce.'

"But I tell you, that not only must a man not commit adultery, but if he looks at a woman with bad thoughts in his mind, he is already a sinner before God. And about divorce, I tell you, that a man who divorces from his wife commits adultery himself, and leads his wife into doing the same, and also leads into sin him who marries the divorced woman.

"That is the second commandment.

"The third commandment is this: In the old law you were told, 'Do not forswear yourself, but keep your oaths before God.'

"But I say that you should not swear at all, but if you are asked about anything, say, 'Yes' if it is Yes, and 'No' if it is No. You must not swear by anything. Man is altogether in God's power, and cannot promise beforehand to do what his oath binds him to do.

"That is the third commandment.

"The fourth commandment is, that in the old law it was said: 'An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.'

"But I say that you should not return evil for evil, and take an eye for an eye, or a tooth for a tooth. And if any one strikes you on one cheek, it is better to turn the other cheek to him, than to give a blow in answer to a blow. And if any one wants to take away your shirt, it is better to give him your coat as well, than to be his enemy and fight with your brother. You must not resist evil with evil.

"That is the fourth commandment.

"The fifth commandment is that in your old law it was

said: 'Love the people of your own nation, and hate the people of other nations.'

"But I tell you that you must love everybody. If men think themselves your enemies, and hate and curse you, and attack you, you should still love them and do good to them. All men are sons of one Father. All are brethren; and therefore you must love every one the same.

"That is the fifth and last commandment."

Matt. V, 21-48.

VII.

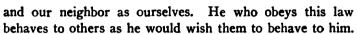
· And Jesus went on to tell all who were listening to him what would happen if they obeyed his commandments.

"Do not think," said he, "that if you do not get angry with people, are peaceable with everybody, live with one wife, do not swear, do not defend yourselves against those who offend you, and give away all you are asked for, and love your enemies—do not think that if you live like that, your life will be harder and worse than it is now. Do not think so; your life will not be worse, but much better than it now is. Our heavenly Father has given us this law, not to make our lives worse, but that we might have true life.

"Live according to this teaching, and the Kingdom of God will come, and you will have all you need.

"To birds and beasts God has given their laws, and when they live according to those laws things go well with them. And things will go well with you, if you obey the law of God. What I say, I do not say from myself, but it is the law of God, and is written in the hearts of all men. If this law would not bring welfare to men, God would not have given it.

"The law, in a few words, is that we should love God,



"And therefore every one who hears these words of mine, and fulfils them, does as a man does who builds his house on a rock. Such a man fears neither rain, nor floods, nor storms, because his house is built on a rock. But every one who hears my words, and does not fulfil them, acts like a thoughtless man who builds his house on sand. Such a house will not stand against the waters or the storms, but will fall down in ruins."

And when Jesus had finished speaking, the people were astonished at his teaching. Matt. VI, 26-33; VII, 24,-8.

VIII.

And after that Jesus began to explain to the people, in parables, the meaning of the Kingdom of God.

Here is the first parable he told them:

"When a man sows seed on his field, he does not keep thinking about it, but sleeps at night, and gets up in the morning, and goes about his business without troubling how the seeds come up and grow. The seeds swell and sprout, the green appears, stalks form, then ears, and the grain swells. And only when the corn is ripe for harvest does the master send laborers to reap it.

"So also God does not establish the Kingdom of Heaven among men by His own power, but leaves it to people to establish it themselves."

Jesus told them a second parable, to show that men who have not the Kingdom of Heaven within them, and whom, therefore, God does not take into His Kingdom, He leaves in the world for them to make themselves worthy to enter the Kingdom of God.

He said:



"The Kingdom of Heaven is like a fisherman who casts out his nets in the sea and catches all sorts of fish. Having caught them, he sorts them, keeps those he needs, and puts back into the sea those that are no good."

And he told a third parable about the same thing:

"A master sowed good seed in his field; but when the seed began to come up, weeds grew up too among it. And the laborers came and said to the master, 'Did you sow bad seeds? Many weeds are growing in your field. Send us, and we will go and pull them up.' But the master said, 'No; you had better not, or in pulling up the weeds you will tread down the wheat; let them grow together, and when harvest-time comes, I will tell the reapers to gather up the wheat, and to throw away the weeds.'

"So also God does not allow people to interfere with the lives of others, and does not interfere Himself. Only by his own efforts can each man come to God."

Mark IV, 26-9; Matt. XIII, 47, 48; 24-30.

IX.

Besides these parables, Jesus told another about the Kingdom of Heaven.

He said:

246

"When seeds are sown in a field, not all of them grow up alike. This is what happens: some seeds fall on the road, and birds come and pick them up. Others fall on stony ground, and though they grow up, it is only for a short time, for they have no soil into which to strike their roots, and so their shoots soon dry up. And some seeds fall among thorns, and the thorns choke them. But there are some that fall on good earth, and grow, and one grain bears thirty or sixty grains.

"So it is with men. There are some who do not re-



ceive the Kingdom of Heaven into their hearts; and temptations of the flesh come to them and steal away what was sown: these are the seeds sown on the road. The seed on the stony ground is, when men at first accept the teaching gladly, but afterwards, when they are insulted and persecuted for it, turn away from it. The seed among thorns is, when people understand the meaning of the Kingdom of Heaven, but worldly cares, and greed for riches choke it within them. And those that are sown on good ground, are those who understand the meaning of the Kingdom of Heaven, and take it into their hearts, and these people bear fruit, some thirty, and some sixty, and some a hundredfold.

"So that he who has kept what was given him will receive more; but from him who has not kept what was given him, all that he has will be taken away. Therefore try with all your might to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Do not grudge anything, if only you can get in.

"Do like the man who, when he found out that a great treasure had been buried in a field, sold all he had and bought that field, and became rich. You should do the same.

"Remember that a little effort for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven brings much fruit; just as a small seed grows into a big tree."

"Every one can by his own effort gain the Kingdom of God, for the Kingdom of God is within you."

Matt. XIII, 3-8, 12, 19-23, 31, 32, 44-6; Luke XVI, 16.

X.

And, hearing these words, a Pharisee named Nicodemus, came to Jesus and asked him how he was to understand that the Kingdom of God is within us. And Jesus

248

said, "That the Kingdom of God is within us means that to enter it we must be born again."

And Nicodemus asked: "How can a man be born again? Can a man go back inside his mother, and again be born?"

Jesus said to him: "To be born again does not mean to be born in the flesh, as a baby is born of its mother, but for the spirit to be born. For the spirit to be born, means, to understand that the spirit of God lives in man, and that besides being born like every man of his mother, he is also born of the spirit of God. What is born of the body is of the body; it suffers and dies. What is born of the spirit is spirit, and lives by itself, and can neither suffer nor die.

"God put his spirit into men, not that they should suffer and perish, but that they should have a glad and an everlasting life. And every man can have that life. That life is the Kingdom of Heaven.

"So the Kingdom of God must not be understood to mean that at some time and in some particular place, the Kingdom of God will come to everybody; but that if people realize the spirit of God in themselves, and live by it, then they enter the Kingdom of Heaven, and do not suffer or die; but if people do not realize the spirit that is in themselves, and live for their bodies, then they suffer and perish."

John III. 1-21.

XI.

More and more people followed Jesus and listened to his teaching; and the Pharisees did not like this, and they began to consider what they could accuse Jesus of, before the people.

One Saturday Jesus and his disciples were walking through the fields; and the disciples plucked ears of corn, rubbed them between their hands, and ate the grain. But by the teaching of the Jews, God made an agreement with Moses that people should do not work on Saturdays, but should only pray to God. The Pharisees, seeing that the disciples of Jesus rubbed the ears of the corn on a Saturday, stopped them and said: "You should not do that on Saturday. No work should be done on Saturday, but you are rubbing corn. The law says that those who work on Saturday must be put to death."

Jesus heard this, and said: "The Prophet said that God wants love and not sacrifices. If you understood those words, you would not condemn my disciples. Men are more important than Saturdays." And the Pharisees did not know what to answer, and were silent.

Another time some Pharisees saw that Jesus entered the house of Matthew, a tax-collector, and dined with his household. And those with whom he dined were considered by the Pharisees to be sinners. So they blamed Jesus, saying that it was not lawful to eat with the unfaithful.

But Jesus said: "I teach the truth to all who wish to learn the truth. You consider yourselves faithful, and think you know the truth; so there is nothing more for you to learn. It follows that only the unfaithful can be taught; and how are they to learn the truth, if we do not mix with them?"

Then the Pharisees, not knowing what to answer, began reproaching the disciples of Jesus for eating with unwashed hands. They themselves strictly observed their own tradition of how to wash their hands and their dishes, and they would eat nothing that came from the market unless it had been washed.

And to this Jesus replied: "You reproach us because we do not keep the custom of washing before we eat; but it is not that which enters a man's body that can defile him.

It is that which comes out of a man's soul that defiles him, for out of man's soul comes evil: adultery, murder, robbery, avarice, anger, fraud, impudence, envy, calumny, pride, and all evil. All evil comes out of the soul of man; and only evil can defile a man. Let there be love for your brothers in your soul, and then everything will be pure."

Matt. XII, 1-8; IX, 9-13; Mark VII, 1-5; 14-23.

XII.

Once Jesus went apart from the disciples and began to pray. And when he had finished, they came to him and said: "Master, teach us how to pray."

And he said to them:

250

"First of all, you must not pray as is often done, that people may see you praying, and praise you for it. If it is done that way, it is done for the sake of men, and it is men who reward it. The soul does not benefit by such prayers. But if you wish to pray, go into a place where no one will see you, and there pray to your Father; and your Father will give you what you need for your soul.

"And when you pray, do not say too much. Your Father knows what you need, and even if you do not say it at all, He will give you all your soul requires.

"You must pray, first of all, that the spirit of God within us should be holy; that the Kingdom of Heaven should come into our souls; that we should live not according to our own will, but according to God's will; that we should not wish for too much, but only for our daily food; that our Father should help us to forgive our brothers in their sins, and that He should help us to avoid temptations and evil.

"Let your prayer be this:

"Our Father, Who art in Heaven! hallowed be Thy



Name. Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done, on earth as in Heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins, as we forgive them that sin against us. And deliver us from temptation and from evil.

"That is the way to pray; but if you want to pray, think first whether there is no anger in your heart against any one; and if you remember that there is, then go first and make it up with him; or if you cannot find that man, get the anger against him out of your heart, and only then begin to pray. Only then will your prayer be of use to you."

Luke XI, 1; Matt. VI, 5-13; Mark XI, 25, 26; Matt. V, 23, 24.

XIII.

It happened once that Jesus went to dine with a Pharisee. And while he was there, a woman of the town came in. She was one of the unfaithful. She had heard that Jesus was in the Pharisee's house, and came there and brought a bottle of perfume. And she knelt at the feet of Jesus and wept, and her tears dropped on his feet, and she wiped them with her hair, and poured on them the perfume out of her bottle.

And the Pharisee, seeing this, was tempted, and thought that if Jesus were really a prophet he would have known that this woman was unfaithful and a sinner, and would not have let her touch him.

Jesus guessed what the Pharisee was thinking, and turning to him said:

"Shall I tell you what I am thinking?"

"Yes, tell me," said the Pharisee.

And Jesus said:

"Two men owed a rich man, one £50 and the other £5. And neither of them had anything to pay with. The rich

man forgave both of them the debt. Now, which of the two do you think would love and tend the rich man best?"

The Pharisee said:

252

"Of course the one who owed most."

Then Jesus, pointing to the woman, said:

"So it is with you and with this woman. You think yourself righteous, and therefore not owing God much. She considers herself unfaithful, and therefore owing him much. When I came into your house, you did not give me any water to wash my feet with, but she has washed them with tears and dried them with her hair. You did not kiss me, but she kisses my feet. You did not give me any oil for my head, but she pours rich perfume on my feet. She thinks herself a great sinner; and therefore it is easy for her to love people. But you consider yourself righteous, and so it is difficult for you to love. But to him who loves much, all is forgiven."

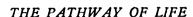
Luke VII. 36-48.

XIV.

Another day Jesus was passing through Samaria. He was weary, and sat down by a well, while his disciples went into the town to buy bread. A woman came from the village to fetch water, and Jesus asked her to let him drink. The woman said to him: "Why, you Jews don't have anything to do with us Samaritans. So how can you ask me for a drink?" Jesus answered: "If you knew me, and what I teach, you would not speak like that, but would give me some water, and I should give you the water of life."

The woman did not understand him, and said, "Where would you get any other water? Here there is no water but this out of the well of our father Jacob."

And he said to her: "He who drinks of your water



will want to drink again, but he who drinks of my water will always be satisfied, and will give others to drink of it."

The woman understood that he was talking about godly matters, and said: "But I am a Samaritan, and you are a Jew, so you cannot teach me. Our people pray on this mountain, and you Jews say that God's only house is in Jerusalem."

Jesus said: "That used to be so; but now the time has come when men will pray to the Father, and not on this mountain nor in Jerusalem, but every one will worship the heavenly Father, not in this place or that, but in the spirit and in truth. God is a spirit, and must be worshipped in spirit and in truth."

The woman did not understand what he said to her, and replied: "I have heard that God's messenger will come, and then everything will be explained."

And Jesus said: "Woman, try to understand what I have told you, and do not wait for anything more."

John IV, 4-26.

XV.

Jesus went through the towns and villages preaching, and he also sent his disciples to places he intended to visit. He told them:

"Many people do not know the blessing of real life. I pity them all, and should like to show them what I know. As a master cannot manage to work his field alone, but calls laborers for the harvest, so I call you. Go to the different towns, and tell of the teaching about the Kingdom of God everywhere. Tell people the commandments of the Kingdom, and yourselves fulfil those commandments in everything.

"I am sending you like sheep among wolves. Be wise

as serpents and pure as doves. First of all, have nothing of your own, take nothing with you: no bag, no bread, no money, only the clothes on your bodies and the shoes on your feet. And do not make distinctions between people. Do not choose the house in which you will stay, but stay at the first house you come to. When you enter, greet the inmates. If they receive you, go in; if not, go to the next house.

"People will hate you for what you say, and will attack and drive you from place to place, but do not be dismayed. When you are driven from one village go to another; and if you are turned out of that, go to a third. You will be hunted, as sheep are hunted by wolves, and will be beaten, and will be taken before the rulers, to justify yourselves to them. And when you are brought before the judges and before the rulers, do not think about what you are going to say, but know that within you lives the spirit of your Father, and He will say what is necessary.

"People may kill your body, but they cannot do anything to your soul, so do not be afraid of men. But be afraid only of your soul perishing with your body, if you swerve from fulfilling your Father's will. That is what you should fear. Not one little bird perishes without your Father's will. Without His will, not a hair falls from your head; and if you are in His care, what have you to fear?"

Luke X, 1-7; Matt. X, 7-12; 16-31.

XVI.

And the disciples he sent out went one way, while Jesus with the other disciples went another way, through the villages and hamlets. And once he came into a village, and a woman named Martha asked him to her house. He went in and began to speak, and Martha's sister Mary sat

at his feet, listening, while Martha busied herself getting food ready.

And Martha saw that her sister sat at the feet of Jesus, listening to him; and she came to Jesus and said: "I am doing all the work alone, while my sister sits listening to you. Tell her to come and work with me."

And Jesus said:

"Martha, Martha! You are busy and anxious about many things, but only one thing is necessary. And Mary has chosen that one thing that is necessary, and which no one can take from her. For true life, not food for the body, but food for the soul is needed.'

And Jesus told a parable about it:

"A man once had a very good harvest; and thought, Now I will rebuild my barns, and will put up larger ones, and will gather all my goods into them. And I will say to my soul: 'Here, soul, is plenty of everything. Rest, eat, drink, and live for your pleasure.' But God said to him, 'You fool; this night your soul shall be taken from you, and all you have collected will belong to others.'

"So it happens to everybody who prepares for the life of the body, and does not live for the soul.

"Only he lives a real life who gives up his own will, and is always ready to do the will of God. But he who is anxious about his bodily life destroys his real life."

Luke X, 38-42; XII, 15-21; IX, 23-5.

XVII.

Jesus happened to hear some people telling how Pilate had killed some Galileans, and also how a tower had fallen and crushed eighteen men. And Jesus asked the people:

"Do you think those men were particularly guilty of anything? No; we all know that they were not at all worse than we are. And what has happened to them might at any moment happen to us. All of us may die, to-day or to-morrow. We cannot escape death, so there is no need for us to take care of our bodily life. We know that it must soon end. We must take care of that which does not die—the life of the spirit."

And he explained this by a parable:

"A master had in his garden an apple tree that bore no fruit; and he said to his gardener, 'It is now three years that I come looking for fruit, and this tree has still no fruit. It must be cut down, for it only takes up room uselessly.' But the gardener said, 'Let us wait a little longer, master, and I will dig round it and manure it, and we shall see next summer. Perhaps it will bear fruit. If it has no fruit next year, then we will cut it down.'

"So it is with us. While we live only in the body, and do not bear the fruit of the spirit, our Master does not cut us down, does not put us to death, because he expects fruit from us—the life of the spirit. But if we do not bear fruit, we cannot escape destruction. To understand this, no wisdom is needed; every one can see it for himself. For not only about household matters, but even about things that happen in the whole world, we know how to reason and guess what will happen. When the wind is from the west we say it will rain; when it is from the south we say it will be fine; and so it is. How is that we can foretell the weather, but cannot foresee that we must all die, and that it is not our mortal bodily life, but the immortal spiritual life, that we must preserve?"

Luke XIII, 1-9; XII, 54-7.



XVIII.

Another time Jesus told the people a parable of what man's life is like. He said:

"There was a rich man who had to go away from home. And before he went he called his slaves and gave them ten pounds of silver, one pound to each, and he said: 'Work, each of you, while I am away, with what I have given you.' Having said that, he started on his journey. And when he had gone the slaves felt free, and did as they liked. But when the master returned, he called his slaves, and ordered each of them to tell him what he had done with the silver. The first came and said: 'With your pound of silver I have earned ten pounds.' And the master said to him, 'That is well, good servant; you have been faithful in a small thing, so I will give you great things to manage. Be my equal, sharing all my wealth.'

"The second slave came, and said: 'Master, with your pound of silver I have earned five.' And the master said to him: 'You have done well, good slave. You too shall be my equal in the whole of my estate.'

"Then came the third slave, and said: 'Here is your pound of silver, Lord; I wrapped it up in a handkerchief, and kept it, because I know you—you are a severe man. You take where you did not put anything, and reap where you did not sow; and I was afraid of you.' And the master said: 'Foolish slave, I will judge you by your own words. You say that for fear of me you kept my silver and did not use it. If you knew that I am severe, and take where I have not put, why did you not do as I ordered? Had you used my silver, my wealth would have increased, and you would have done what I told you. But now you have not done the very thing I gave you the silver for; so you must not keep it.'

"And the master ordered them to take the silver from him who had not used it, and to give it to them who had worked most. Then the servants said to the master: 'Lord, they already have so much.' But the master said, 'Give it to those who have worked much, for those who use what is given them get more; but those who do not use it have everything taken away from them.'

"So it is with the life of men," said Jesus. "The rich master is the Father. His slaves are people. The silver is the spirit of God in man. As the master did not himself work with his silver, but told each of his slaves to work with what was entrusted to him, so our heavenly Father has given men His spirit that they should increase it in themselves, and should use what has been given them. And wise men understand that the life of the spirit is given them to do the will of the Father, and they increase in themselves the life of the spirit, and become sharers in the life of the Father. But unwise people, like the foolish slave, fear to lose their bodily life, and do only their own will, and not the will of their Father; and so they lose the true life.

"Such people lose that which is most precious—the life of the spirit. And so there is no more harmful mistake than to consider one's life to be of the body and not of the spirit. One must be at one with the spirit of life. He who is not with it is against it. One must serve the spirit of life, and not one's own body."

Luke XIX, 11-26; Matt. XXV, 14-30; Luke XI, 23.

XIX.

One day some children were brought to Jesus. His disciples began to turn them away; but Jesus saw this, and said:

"You should not turn the children away. Children

should not be sent away, but we should learn from them, for they are nearer to the Kingdom of God than grown-up people. Children do not use bad language, do not bear malice, do not commit adultery, do not take oaths, do not go to law with anybody, and do not know any difference between their own nation and other nations. Children are nearer than grown-up people to the Kingdom of Heaven. One must not drive children away, but must be careful not to lead them into temptation.

"Temptations destroy men by leading them, under the guise of what is good and pleasant, to do most harmful deeds. If a man gives way to temptation he destroys both his body and his soul. Therefore it is better for one's body to suffer, than to fall into temptation. As a fox that has got its paw into a trap bites off the paw in order to escape, so it is better for every man to suffer in his body than to yield to temptation. It is better not only for a hand or a foot, but even for the whole body to perish, rather than to get to like evil, and become accustomed to it. Temptations bring sorrow to the world. By temptations, all evil comes into the world."

Matt. XIX, 13, 14; XVIII, 2-9; Luke XVIII, 17.

XX.

And Jesus also said that of all temptations the worst is anger.

"A man is angry with his brother for his sins, and thinks that by being angry he can cure his brother of his sins, and forgets that not one of us can judge his brother, because every one of us is full of sin; and before correcting our brother, we must correct ourselves; otherwise we may see a little grain of dust in our brother's eyes, and not see a shaving in our own. And so, if you think your brother.

has acted badly, choose a time and a place where you can talk with him alone, and tell him gently what you have against him. If he listens to you, instead of being your enemy he will become your friend. But if he will not listen to you, be sorry for him and leave him alone."

And one of the disciples asked: "But if he does not listen to me, and again offends me? Am I to forgive him again? And if he offends me again and again, a third and a fourth and a seventh time, must I even then forgive him?"

And Jesus answered: "Not only seven times, but seventy times seven, we should forgive; for as God forgives us all our sins, if only we repent of them, so we must always forgive our brothers."

Matt. VII, 1-5; XVIII, 15-22.

XXI.

To explain this Jesus told them the following parable: "A rich man began reckoning up with his debtors. And a debtor was brought to him who owed him a thousand pounds, and who had nothing to pay it with. And the rich man could have sold the debtor's estate, and his wife and children, and the man himself. But the debtor begged for mercy; and the rich man had pity on him and forgave him the whole debt. And when he had been let off, a poor man who owed him something came to him and asked to be forgiven his debt. But the debtor who had been let off, would not excuse the poor man's debt, but demanded payment at once. And however much the poor man begged, the other would have no mercy, but cast the poor man into prison. This was noticed, and people came to the rich man, and told him what his debtor had done. Then the rich man called the debtor back to him, and said: 'I let you off the whole of your debt because you asked me; and you should



have forgive your debtor, as I forgave you. But what have you done?' And then the rich man enforced the law against his debtor.

"The same happens to us, if we do not forgive from our hearts all who are guilty towards us. Every quarrel with our brother binds us, and takes us further from our Father. And therefore, not to be removed from God, we must forgive our brothers, and must live peaceably and lovingly with men."

Matt. XVIII, 23-35, 18, 19.

XXII.

Once some Pharisees came to Jesus, and asked him if a man might leave his wife and take another. And Jesus answered:

"You know that a child can be born only of one father and mother. God has arranged it so; and man must not violate what God has arranged. If a man violates what God has arranged, and leaves his wife and takes another woman, he commits a threefold sin—against himself, against his wife, and against other people. He harms himself, because he accustoms himself to dissoluteness. He harms his wife, because, by deserting her, he drives her to do wrong. He harms other people, because he tempts them, by setting them an example of adultery."

And the disciples said to Jesus: "It is too difficult to live with only one wife. If one must live with one woman till death, no matter what she may be like, then it is best not to marry at all."

Jesus answered them: "One may abstain from marrying at all. But if a man wishes to live without a wife, let him be quite pure and not think about women. It is well for a man who can live such a life; but if a man cannot do it, let him

marry, and live with one wife till death, and not allow himself to be tempted by other women." Matt. XIX, 3-12.

XXIII.

One day the collectors of tithes for the Temple came to Peter, and asked him: "Will your Master pay what is due?" Peter said that he would. And Jesus, hearing this, said to Peter: "What do you think, Peter—from whom does the King take taxes, from his sons or from strangers?" Peter said, "From strangers." "So we, if we are sons of God," said Jesus, "need not pay tithes. But in order not to tempt them, pay them; not because we are obliged to pay, but in order not to lead them into temptation."

Another time some Pharisees agreed with the King's officers and came to Jesus, to catch him in his words, and to see whether he would refuse his obligation to the King. They said to him: "You teach everything truly, so tell us, Must we pay taxes to the King?" Jesus said: "Show me with what you pay the taxes to the King." They showed him a coin. On the coin was stamped the King's head. And Jesus pointed to it and said, "Give to the King what is the King's; but what is God's—your souls—give to nobody but God. Your money, property, work—everything that any one asks of you, give to him, but do not do for anybody what is against God's laws."

Matt. XVII, 24-7; XXII, 15-22.

XXIV.

It happened one day that the disciples of Jesus came to a village and asked to be allowed to spend the night there. But no one would let them in. And the disciples came to Jesus and told Him about it, saying: "Such wicked people live there—they deserve to be killed by a thunderstorm!"

And Jesus was grieved, and said: "You do not understand of what spirit you are. I do not teach how to destroy, but how to save people. How can one wish one's neighbor any ill? In every man lives the same spirit of God as in you, and you must not wish ill to that which is within yourselves."

Another time the Scribes and Pharisees brought to Jesus a woman taken in adultery, and placed her before him, saying: "Master, this woman was taken in adultery, and according to the law of Moses such women must be stoned. What do you say?"

They said that to tempt him. Had he said that she must be stoned, it would have been contrary to his teaching of love for all; but if he had said that it must not be done, he would have spoken against the law of Moses. Jesus, however, did not answer anything, but stooping low, wrote with his finger in the sand.

They asked him the same thing again. Then he looked up and said: "You say that according to the law she must be stoned—then do it. But let him throw the first stone at her who is sinless." Having said that, he bowed his head, and again wrote on the ground. And the accusers began to go away one after the other, and Jesus was left alone with the woman.

Then Jesus lifted his head, and seeing no one but the woman, said to her: "It seems that no one has condemned you?" She answered, "No one, Lord."

"Then neither do I condemn you," said Jesus. "Go, and sin no more." Luke IX, 52-6; John VIII, 3-11.

XXV

Jesus taught the people that all men are children of one Father, and that therefore the whole law of God is to love God and one's neighbor.

And one lawgiver, knowing this, and wishing to catch Jesus in his words, and to show him that all men are not equal, and that men of different nations cannot be equally the sons of God, asked Jesus: "You teach us to love our neighbor. But who is my neighbor?"

Jesus answered him by a parable, and said:

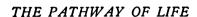
"There was a rich Jew, and it happened that once, as he was returning home, he was attacked by robbers, who beat him, robbed him, and left him by the roadside. A Jewish priest passed by, and saw the wounded man, but passed on without stopping. And another Jew, a Levite, passed and he also saw the wounded man, and went by. Then a man of another nation, a Samaritan, came along the road, and he saw the wounded man; and—without considering that the Jews did not look upon Samaritans as neighbors, but as foreigners and enemies—he pitied the Jew, lifted him up, and took him on his ass to an inn. There he washed and dressed his wounds, paid the innkeeper for him, and only left when the Jew could do without him.

"You ask, Who is one's neighbor?" said Jesus. "He in whom there is love considers every man his neighbor, no matter what nation he may belong to."

Luke X. 25-37.

XXVI.

The teaching of Jesus spread more and more; and the Pharisees grew more and more angry with him. They said to the people: "Do not listen to him; he is deceiving you.



If you were to live by his commandments there would be more evil than there is now in the world."

Jesus heard this, and said to them:

"You say that if I teach the people not to seek for riches, but to be poor; not to be angry, not to demand an eve for an eve and a tooth for a tooth, but to bear all things and love everybody—I do away with evil by evil, and that if men followed my teaching their life would be worse than it was before. You say that in place of the old evil there would be a new evil. That is not true. It is not I who put one evil in place of another, but it is you who drive out evil with evil. You wish to destroy evil by threats, executions, oaths and by killing. But evil still does not get destroyed. And it cannot be so destroyed, for no power can destroy itself. I do not drive out evil by such means as you use. I destroy evil by good. I destroy evil by calling on men to fulfil those commandments which will save them from all evil." Matt. XII, 24-8.

XXVII.

One day his mother and brothers came to Jesus, and could not get to him, because there were so many people around him. And a man noticed this, and came to Jesus and said: "Your relations, your mother and brothers, are standing out there, and wish to see you."

And Jesus said: "My mother and my brothers are those who know the will of the Father, and do it.

"For every man the will of God his Father should be more important than his father, his mother, his wife, his children, his brothers or his sisters, or than all his property, and even than his bodily life.

"In worldly matters every reasonable man, before he

begins doing anything, reckons out if what he means to do is profitable, and if it is profitable he does it, and if not, he does not do it. Any one who wishes to build a house, before beginning, sits down and counts how much money will be needed, how much he has, and whether it will be enough to complete the house; so that it should not happen that, having begun to build, he is unable to finish, and has only wasted his strength and his time. And every king, if he wants to go to war, first considers whether with 10,000 men he can fight against 20,000. If he reckons out that he cannot, he sends messengers to make peace, and does not fight.

"So every man must understand that all that he looks upon as his: his family, his property, and his bodily life itself, will be taken from him to-day or to-morrow, and that the one thing that is his, and can never be taken from him, is his spiritual life, and that he can and must care only about that."

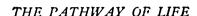
Hearing this, a man said: "It is well if there be a spiritual life; but how if we give away everything, and there is no such life?"

To this Jesus replied:

"Every one knows that there is a spiritual life, and that it alone does not die. You all know that, but you do not act on what you know—not because you doubt it, but because you are diverted from real life by false cares."

And he told them this parable:

"A master prepared a feast, and sent his servants to invite the guests; but the guests refused to come. One said, 'I have bought some land, and must go and see it.' Another said, 'I have bought some cattle, and must go and plough with them.' A third said, 'I have married, and it is my wedding-feast.' So the servants returned, and told their master that no one would come. Then the master sent to



invite the beggars. The beggars did not refuse to come, and they feasted.

"In the same way, only when men are free from bodily cares do they know the spiritual life."

Luke VIII, 19-21; Matt. XII, 46-50; Luke XIV. 26-33. 15-24.

XXVIII.

Once a young man came to Jesus, and knelt down before him, saying: "Good Master, tell me what to do to get eternal life."

Jesus answered: "Why do you call me good? No one is good but God. You know the commandments. Keep them."

And the young man asked: "Which? There are many commandments."

Jesus answered: "Do not kill, do not commit adultery, do not lie, do not steal, do not offend any one, and honor your father and mother."

And the man said: "I have kept these commandments ever since I was a boy."

Jesus looked at him and felt fond of him, and said: "One thing you lack. Go, sell all you have, and divide it among the poor."

And the young man was troubled, and went away without replying, for he was very rich.

And Jesus said to his disciples:

"You see how hard it is for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven!" The disciples were dismayed at these words, but Jesus repeated them, saying, "Yes, children; it is very, very hard for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God. It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of Heaven." And they were still more dismayed, and said among themselves: "How can one live, if one must not have anything? One would freeze and starve." But Christ said: "It only seems frightful to the physical man; but to the spiritual man it is easy. He who believes and tries it, will see that this is true."

Mark X, 17-27; Matt. XIX, 18.

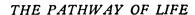
XXIX.

Jesus also said: "You cannot serve two masters at the same time: God and riches; the will of the Father, and your own will. You must choose between the two; and serve the one or the other."

The Pharisees, who liked riches, heard this, and laughed at the words of Jesus. And he said to them: "You think that because men honor you for your riches, you are really honorable? No! God does not look at what is outside, but at the heart. Things that men think much of are worthless in God's sight. It is not the rich, but the poor who enter the Kingdom of Heaven."

Jesus knew that the Pharisees believed that after death some people go to hell and some to heaven, and he told them this parable about riches:

"There once lived a very rich man; he feasted, dressed in fine clothes, and made merry every day. And in the same place there lived a scabby beggar, called Lazarus. Lazarus came into the rich man's courtyard hoping to get some of the scraps left over from the rich man's table. But he got none, for the rich man's dogs ate up the scraps; and they also licked Lazarus' sores. The rich man and Lazarus both died. And the rich man, in hell, saw Abraham in the distance, and scabby Lazarus with him. And the rich man said:



"'Father Abraham, I dare not trouble you; but I see with you scabby Lazarus, who used to lie at my gate; send him to me, and let him dip his finger in water to cool my throat, for I am burning with fire.' But Abraham said: 'Why should I send Lazarus into the flames to you? You had all you wanted in the other world, and Lazarus had nothing but sorrow. I should like to do what you ask, but I cannot, for there is no communication between us and you.' Then the rich man said: 'If it is so, Father Abraham, at least send Lazarus to my house. I left five brothers, and am sorry for them. Let him tell them what riches bring. lest they too come to the torment I suffer.' And Abraham said, 'They know it. Moses and all the prophets have told of it.' But the rich man replied, 'Still, it would be better if some one rose from the dead and went to them: it would make them bethink themselves.' But Abraham replied, 'If they do not listen to Moses and the proppets, neither would they hear though some one rose from the dead."

Luke XVI, 13-15; 19-31.

XXX.

After this Jesus went into Galilee, and lived there with his parents. And when the Jewish Feast of the Harvest came, the brothers of Jesus prepared to go up, and asked Jesus to come with them to the Feast. They did not believe in his teaching, and said to him: "There now! You say that the Jewish worship of God is wrong, and that you know the right way to worship God by deeds. If you really think that you know what no one else knows, then come with us to the Feast—there will be many people there, and you can announce your teaching to them all. If they all believe you, your disciples will see that you are right. Why

hide? You say that our worship of God is wrong, and that you know the right way: well then, show it to everybody!"

And Jesus said to them: "There is a time for everything. I will go when the time comes." So his brothers went away, but he stayed behind.

There were many people at the Feast, and they disputed about the teaching of Jesus. Some said his teaching was true; others that his teaching only disturbed the people. When the Feast was half over, Jesus himself came to Jerusalem, and went into the Temple. In the porch of the Temple were cattle: cows and bulls, as well as sheep, and cages of pigeons, and money-changers who sat beside counters with money. All this was wanted for the sacrifices to God. But Jesus, entering the Temple, and seeing many people there, first of all drove the cattle out of the Temple, and let the pigeons go, and upset the tables of the money-changers, and then said to the people:

"The prophet Isaiah said: 'The house of God is not the Temple in Jerusalem, but the whole world of God's people.' And the prohpet Jeremiah also said: 'Do not believe the false saying, that this is the house of the Eternal; do not believe it, but change your lives and do not judge falsely, nor oppress the stranger, the widow and the orphan; do not shed innocent blood, and do not go into the house of God and then say: "Now we can safely do wrong." Make not my house a den of thieves. I, God, do not rejoice at your sacrifices, but I rejoice at your love of one another.' Understand that these words of the prophet mean: 'The living temple is the whole world of people, when they love one another. We must serve God not in a Temple, but by living in the spirit, and by good actions.'"

All the people listened and wondered at his words, and asked one of another, "How does he, without learning, know

all this?" And Jesus heard that everybody was astonished at his words, and he said: "My teaching is not mine, but His who sent me; for he who invents for himself looks for fame from men, but he who seeks for that which He who sent him wants, is true, and there is no falseness in him. I only teach you to fulfil the will of the Father. If you begin to fulfil the will of God, you will know that I have not invented what I say, but that this teaching comes from God."

And many said: "People say he is a false Prophet, but here he speaks openly before everybody, and no one says anything against him. The only thing that prevents one believing that he is the Messiah (God's Messenger) is that it is written that when the Messiah comes, no one will know where he came from; but we know this man, and his whole family."

Then Jesus said to them: "You know me, and where I come from in the body, but you do not know where I come from in the spirit. You do not know from whom I come in the spirit, though He is the only one you need know. If you had been told that I am the Messiah, you would have believed in me, the man; but you do not believe the Father, Who is in me and in you. One must believe only the Father."

John VII, 1-29; II, 13-16; Matt. XXI, 13; XII, 7.

XXXI.

And many of the people, seeing all this and hearing him, said: "He really is a prophet." Others said: "This is the Messiah." But some said: "Can the Messiah come from Galilee? It is said in the Scriptures that the Messiah will come from the seed of David, out of Bethlehem, the place David came from."

And there arose a dispute about him, and an agitation sprang up among the people.

Then the High Priests sent men to seize him, but the men could not make up their minds to do so; and when they returned to the High Priests and Pharisees, the latter asked them: "Why have you not brought him?" And they replied: "No man ever spoke like this man."

The Pharisees said to them: "Have you too been led astray? Do any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees, believe in him? Only the accursed people believe in him, and they do not know the law."

And they all returned to their homes.

But Jesus went to the Mount of Olives, and spent the night there with his disciples; and in the morning he came again to the Temple, and many people came to listen to him, and he taught them again, saying: "My teaching gives light to the world. He who accepts it will not walk in darkness but will see clearly what is good and what is evil. I teach what my Father, the Spirit who sent me, teaches to every man."

And they asked him: "Where is your Father?"

He replied: "If you knew me, you would know my Father also."

They asked him: "Who are you?"

He said: "I am that spirit which had no beginning and will have no end. I am the Son of Man, but I acknowledge the spirit of God to be my Father. When you raise up in yourselves the Son of Man, you will know who I am, and will understand that I do nothing of myself, and say nothing of myself, but do and say only what my Father has taught me."

John VII. 40-9, 53: VIII. 12-29.



XXXII.

The Jews surrounded Jesus, and said: "All you say is difficult to understand, and does not agree with our Scriptures. Do not torment us, but tell us plainly: Are you the Messiah who, according to our Scriptures, is to come into the world?"

And Jesus answered them: "I have already told you who I am, but you do not believe it. Do what I tell you, and then you will understand who I am, and why I have come. He who follows me and does what I say—he who understands my teaching and fulfils it—is with me and with the Father. I and the Father are one."

And the Jews were offended by these words, and took up stones to kill him.

And he asked them: "Why do you want to kill me?"
They answered: "We want to kill you because you, a
man, make yourself out to be God."

And Jesus answered them: "I said that I am a son of God, and am one with the Father when I do His will. He who acknowledges himself to be a son of God ceases to be a slave, and receives everlasting life. As a servant does not live always in his master's house, but the master's son always lives at home, so a man who lives in the spirit is united with the Father, and lives eternally. I tell you truly that he who keeps my word will never see death."

Then the Jews said to him: "Now we know that there is a devil in you. Abraham is dead, and the prophets are dead, yet you say that he who fulfils your words will never see death. Are you greater than our Father Abraham? Abraham is dead, and the prophets are dead, but he who fulfils your words will not see death!"

And Jesus said: "Truly, truly I tell you, before Abraham was, I am."

Jesus was speaking about that spirit of God which lived in him and lives in every man, and which has no beginning and no end; but they did not understand it.

The Jews did not know what to do with him, and could not get him convicted. And he went beyond the river Jordan, and stayed there. John X, 24-38; VIII, 34-59.

XXXIII.

Once, when Jesus was returning to Jerusalem, two of his disciples, James and John, came to him and said, "Master, promise us that you will do what we ask."

Jesus said: "What do you want?"

They replied: "That we may be your equals."

But Jesus said: "You do not yourselves know what you are asking. Every one can enter the Kingdom of Heaven by his own efforts, but no one can do it for another."

And Jesus called the other disciples to him and said: "Worldly men consider who is higher and who is lower among them; but among you, none should be higher and none lower. Among you he who serves every one will be the highest. He who wants to be first among you, let him think himself the last; for it is the Father's will that the Son of Man should live not to be served, but to serve everybody, and to give his bodily life for the life of the spirit."

Mark X, 35-45.

XXXIV.

About this, Jesus told them another parable. He said:

"A master went out early one morning to hire laborers for his vineyard, and having agreed to pay them a shilling a day, sent them into his vineyard. Then at breakfast time he went out again, and saw other men without work, and said to them: 'You, too, may go into my vineyard, and I will pay you what is right.' And they went. He did this again at the dinner hour, and in the afternoon. And when it was already evening, he again found men without work, and said to them: 'Why do you stand here all day without work?' They said: 'No one has hired us.' And he said: 'Go you, too, into my vineyard, and you shall be paid what is right.'

"When the time for payment came, the master of the vineyard said to his steward: 'Call the laborers and pay them all equally, beginning with the last and up to the first.' And those who came in the evening received a shilling.

"Then those who had been hired first, thought they would receive more; but they, too, received a shilling each. Then the first ones began to grumble at the master of the vineyard, saying: 'These men only worked one hour, but we worked all day from the morning, and you make them equal with us.'

"The master told them: 'You should not grumble. Did you not agree to work for a shilling? Take what is due to you, and go. If I wish to give to the last as much as to the first, may I not do as I like with my own? You are offended at my being kind, and are jealous of your brothers. That is not right.'

"And so it is with men: whether a man does what God wishes him to do early or late, all will receive equally, the last the same as the first."

Matt. XX, 1-16.

XXXV.

And Jesus explained this by another parable. He said: "A man had two sons, and the younger wished to go away from his father, and said: 'Father, give me my share

of the property.' And his father did so. Then the younger son took his share, and went to a foreign country. There he wasted all he had, and became quite poor, and he sank so low that he had to go as a swineherd. And he had nothing to eat but the acorns that were given to the pigs. And he thought about his life, and said to himself: 'I was wrong to leave my father. At my father's there was plenty of everything, and even his laborers have enough to eat; while here I eat pigs' food. I had better go to my father, bow down at his feet, and say: "I have sinned, father, towards you, and am not worthy to be your son. Take me back as a laborer."'

"Thinking this, he went back to his father; and when he came near the house his father saw him, and went out to meet him, and took him in his arms and kissed him.

"And the son said: 'Father, I have sinned against you, and am not worthy to be your son.' The father did not answer these words, but ordered his servants to bring the best clothes and good shoes; and he made his son put them on. And he also ordered a servant to kill a fatted calf. And when everything was ready, the father told those of his household: 'This son of mine was dead, and is alive again, he was lost, and is found. Let us feast in honor of this joy.'

"And when they had all sat down to table, the elder son came back from the fields, and saw that there was feasting in the house. And calling a laborer, he asked him: 'Why are our people feasting?' And the laborer answered: 'Have you not heard that your brother has returned, and your father is rejoicing?'

"The elder brother was offended, and did not enter the house. But his father came out to him, and called him. Still the elder son would not enter, but said to his father:

'I have worked for you so many years, and never disobeyed your orders, yet you never killed a fatted calf for me! My younger brother went away and wasted all his property with drunkards, and now you make such a feast for him.'

"And the father answered the elder son: 'You are always with me, and all that is mine is yours. And you should not be hurt, but glad, that your brother who was dead is now alive again, and after being lost has now been found.'

"That is the way God receives all, when—sooner or later—they return to the Father and enter the Kingdom of Heaven."

Luke XV, 11-32.

XXXVI.

One day Jesus said to his disciples: "Tell me, how do people understand my teaching?" And they answered: "Some think that you teach the same that John did; others say that you teach what Isaiah taught, and others say your teaching is like Jeremiah's, and that you are a prophet."

"Yes," said Jesus, "but how do you understand my teaching?"

And Simon Peter said: "I think you teach that the spirit of God lives in every man, and that therefore every man is a son of God." Jesus said to him: "You are happy, Simon, to have understood this. No man could have shown this to you, but you have understood it because God dwells in you. It is not I by my words that have shown it to you, but God, my Father, has Himself shown it to you."

At this time Jesus told his disciples that in Jerusalem he could not escape attacks and insults from those who did not believe his teaching; but that if they killed him, they would only kill his body, and not that spirit of God which lived in him.

Hearing these words, Peter was very sorry, and took

hold of the hand of Jesus, and said to him: "Don't go to Jerusalem."

Jesus answered: "Do not speak so. If you are afraid of suffering and death for me, that shows that you do not think of what is godly, but only of what is human. In this life people who live for the Kingdom of God must suffer, because the world loves its own, and hates what is godly. Men of the world always have tormented those who fulfilled the will of the Father."

And, calling the people and his disciples, Jesus said: "He who wishes to live according to my teaching, let him give up his bodily life, and be ready to bear all sufferings, for he who fears for his bodily life will lose his true life; but he who gives up his bodily life will save his real life. And let him who wishes to fulfil my teaching, do so not in words but in deeds."

Then he told them this parable:

"A man had two sons; and said to the first: 'Go and work in my garden.' And the son said: 'I won't!' but afterwards repented, and went. And the father went to the second son and said the same to him. The second son answered: 'I will go at once.' But he did not go. Which of the two fulfilled his father's will?"

And the disciples said: "The first."

And Jesus said: "And I tell you that the publicans and adulterers will enter the Kingdom of God before those who talk, but do not act."

Matt. XVI, 13-17; 21-25; XXI, 28-31.

XXXVII.

Then the disciples said to Jesus: "Your teaching is hard. Increase our belief that, if we live as you teach us, it will be well with us."

Jesus understood that they wished to know about the reward for a good life, and he said to them:

"Faith is not the belief in rewards; but faith is a clear understanding of what life is. If you clearly understand that your life is in the spirit of God, you will not expect any reward. A master does not thank a servant for doing his duty. And a servant, if he understands that he is a servant, is not offended at this, but does his work and knows that he will receive what is due to him. So you, too, should fulfil the will of the Father, and understand that you are servants; and when you have done your duty, do not expect reward, but be content with what you get. We must not be anxious to receive reward, but must be anxious not to destroy the life given us to enable us to fulfil the will of the Father. Therefore always be ready, like servants who are expecting their master. The servants do not know whether he will return soon or late, but have to be always ready.

"And so it is in life. Always, at every moment, one must fulfil the will of God, not saying to oneself: "Then or there, I will do so-and-so."

"Therefore, live always in the spirit and in the present. For the life of the spirit there is no such thing as time. Take care that you do not burden yourselves, or befog yourselves with drink, over-eating, or cares, but let the spirit of God always rule over your bodies."

Luke XVII, 5-10; XII, 36-40; XXI, 34.

XXXVIII.

And Jesus told them another parable, to show how people should live. He said:

"A master planted a garden, and dug it, and arranged it, and did everything to make it yield as much fruit as pos-

sible. And he sent laborers into the garden to work, gather the fruit, and pay him according to agreement. And when the time came, the master sent a servant to receive the payment; but the laborers had forgotten that the garden had not been planted and arranged by them, and that they had come when it was quite ready; and they drove away the master's messenger emptyhanded, and lived in the garden as if they were the masters, not considering that the garden was not theirs, and that they lived in it by permission of the master. Then the master sent his steward to remind the laborers that the payment was due; but they drove him away too. Then he sent his son. But the laborers thought that if they killed the son they would be left to themselves. And so they killed him.

"What was the master to do? He could only turn out the laborers, and send others in their place.

"The master is the Father; the garden is the world; the laborers are men; the payment is the life of the spirit; the messengers from the master are holy men who remind people that they should live not for their bodies, but for the spirit.

"People who have gone astray imagine that life is given them for bodily welfare, and not for the fulfilment of the will of the Father, and they kill in themselves the life of the spirit, and so lose their real life."

Mark XII. 1-9.

XXXIX.

After this Christ again came to Jerusalem, and spoke to the people in the Temple about the bad life of the Pharisees.

He said:

"Beware of the teaching of the Scribes, who call them-

selves the orthodox teachers. Beware of them, for they have taken the places of the real teachers, the prophets. They have taken for themselves the right to teach men the will of God. They talk, but do not do what they teach. They wish to be teachers, and therefore try to show off: they dress themselves up, give themselves titles, but do nothing useful. Do not believe them. Remember that no one should call himself 'Teacher.' These self-styled, orthodox teachers of truth think one can be led to God by external ceremonies and vows, and they do not see that the external does not matter, but that all that is important is in the soul of a man. They fulfil what is external and easy, but what is really necessary and difficult (love, mercy, and truth) they leave alone. All they care about is to keep the outward law, and by outward means get others to accept it. Therefore they are like painted coffins: clean outside, but abominable within.

"Outwardly they honor the saints and martyrs; but really it is they that tormented and killed the saints. They were, and are, the enemies of all that is good. From them comes all the evil in the world, for they hide what is good, and call evil good. And that is a thing one must fear most of all, for you yourselves know that any mistake may be set right, but that if people make a mistake as to what is good, it is a mistake that cannot be set right. And that is just what these self-styled pastors do."

After that Jesus said: "I wished to unite all men here in Jerusalem, so that they should live loving one another, and serving one another; but these people only know how to kill those who teach what is good."

And having said this, he left the Temple.

And Jesus said: "I tell you truly, that this Temple will fall in ruins with all its ornaments, and nothing will be

left of it. But there is a Temple of God—the hearts of those that love one another."

And they asked him, "When will that Temple be?" And he answered: "It will not be soon. For a long time people will use my teaching to deceive others, and this will cause wars and commotions, and there will be great law lessness and little love.

"But when everybody has understood the true teaching, then evil and temptations will come to an end."

Luke XX, 46; Matt. XXIII, 1-39; Mark III, 28, 29; Matt. XXIV, 1-14.

XI.

The Scribes and Pharisees tried as hard as they could to destroy Jesus. They assembled in council, and began to discuss how to do it. They said: "This man must be stopped. He makes his teaching so persuasive that if he is left alone, everybody will believe him, and will abandon our religion. Half the people already believe in him; and if all believe his teaching that all men are sons of one Father, and that all are brothers, and that there is nothing in our Hebrew people different from other nations, the Romans will come and conquer us, and there will no longer be a Hebrew kingdom."

And the Scribes and Pharisees long discussed the matter. They wished to kill Jesus, to rid themselves of him; but were afraid of the people, and dared not do it.

Then their High Priest, whose name was Caiaphas, said: "You need not be so much afraid. One man has sometimes to be killed to save a whole nation. And if we do not put an end to this man, the whole nation will perish; or if it does not perish, it will be scattered, and will abandon our one true faith. So we must not hesitate to kill Jesus."

And when Caiaphas had said this, all agreed with him, and decided to kill Jesus. And they would at once have taken him and killed him, but Jesus was not in Jerusalem, and they did not know where he was.

But when the Feast of the Passover drew near, the High Priests thought Jesus would be sure to come with the other people to the Feast, and they told their servants that if any one saw Jesus, he should bring him to them.

And really, six days before the Passover, Jesus said to his disciples: "Now let us go to Jerusalem." But the disciples knew that the High Priests wished to kill him, and they begged him not to go to Jerusalem. They said: "The High Priests have decided to stone you. If you go there they are sure to kill you."

Jesus answered: "Only he who walks in darkness stumbles and falls; but he who walks in the daylight does not stumble. A man cannot err who lives in the light of God's will, and does as God wishes. Such a man cannot be afraid. Come to Jerusalem."

And they got ready and went.

John XI, 47-57, 7-10.

XLI.

When they heard in Jerusalem that Jesus was coming, the people went out to meet him, surrounded him, put him on an ass, ran before him, and broke twigs from the trees and threw them on the road, shouting: "Here is our true King! He has told us about the true God!" And so Jesus rode into Jerusalem. And the people asked: "Who is that?" And those who knew him said: "It is Jesus, the Prophet from Nazareth in Galilee."

When he had ridden up to the Temple, Jesus got off the ass, entered the Temple, and began to teach the people. And the Pharisees and priests saw him, and said to one another: "See, what that man is doing! All the people are going after him!"

They would have liked to take him at once, but dared not, because they feared the people. And they planned how to do it without provoking the people.

So Jesus, quite undisturbed, taught the people. Besides Jews, there were in the Temple heathen Greeks also. The Greeks had heard that the teaching of Jesus was not for Jews only, but for all men, and they wanted to hear him. They told this to Philip, and Philip told Andrew.

The disciples were afraid of bringing Jesus and the Greeks together. They feared that the people would be angry with Jesus for making no difference between the Jews and other nations; and at first they could not make up their minds to tell him what the Greeks wanted; but at last they told him.

Hearing that the Greeks wished to be his disciples, Jesus was at first taken aback. He knew that if he did not make any distinction between Jews and heathens, the Jews would be angry with him. But he soon recovered, and said: "There is no difference between Jews and heathens; the same Son of Man is in all men. Though I perish for it, the time has come to acknowledge the Son of Man, the one spirit of God in all men. A grain of wheat becomes fruitful only when it itself perishes. And a man bears fruit only when he gives his life to fulfil the will of God. He who loves his bodily life, lessens his spiritual life; but he who is ready to give up his bodily life, receives spiritual life.

"My soul is now in conflict, whether I am to yield to considerations of my temporary life, or to do the will of the Father. But can I, now that the time has come when I ought to do that for which I was sent into the world, say:

'Father, deliver me from what I ought to do?' I cannot say that, but can only say: 'Father, make Thyself felt within me, that I may glorify the Son of Man, and unite all men together.'"

And the Jews replied to this, saying: "We know that the Christ must come, but we do not understand what you mean by 'glorifying the Son of Man.'"

And Jesus replied: "To glorify the Son of Man, is to live in the spiritual light and we all have the spiritual light in us. To glorify the Son of Man above that which is of the earth, means to believe that the spirit of God lives in every man. He who believes my teaching does not believe me, but the spirit of God; and the spirit of God gives life to the world, and lives in each one of you. And he who understands my teaching knows that spirit, for that spirit lives in him, and gives life to the world. If any one hears my words and does not understand them. I do not blame him, for I have come not to blame, but to save. He who does not understand my words does not believe in the spirit of God, for what I say I do not say from myself, but from the spirit of the Father. And the spirit of the Father lives in me. What I say, the spirit told me."

And, having said this, Jesus went away, and again hid from the High Priests.

Matt. XXI, 7-12; John XII, 19-36; 44-50.

XLII.

And many of the rich and powerful among those who heard these words believed the teaching of Jesus; but they were afraid to confess this before the Pharisees; for not one of the Pharisees acknowledged that teaching. They

did not acknowledge the truth of the teaching, for they were used to believe human teaching, and not God's.

And again the High Priests and Scribes met in the Court of Caiaphas, and began considering how to seize Jesus secretly, to kill him. They were afraid to take him openly. And one of the first disciples of Jesus, Judas Iscariot, came to their meeting, and said: "If you are afraid to seize Jesus openly, before the people, I will find a time when there will be few people with him, and I will show you where he is, and then you can take him. What will you give me for it?" And they promised him thirty pieces of silver. Judas agreed, and from that time began to look for an opportunity to deliver Jesus to the High Priests, that they might seize him.

Meanwhile Jesus had again gone away from Jerusalem, and he had only his disciples with him. And when the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread came round, the disciples asked him: "Where shall we keep the Feast of the Passover?" And Jesus said: "Go into one of the villages and enter the first house, and say you have no time to prepare for the Passover, but that you ask to be allowed to keep the Feast there."

The disciples did so, and went into the village, and there went to the first house, and the master of the house let them in.

When they had all come—Jesus and his twelve disciples, with Judas Iscariot among them—they sat at a table to keep the Feast of the Passover. And Jesus guessed that Judas had promised to give him up to the Pharisees to be killed, but he did not wish to repay Judas evil for evil, and to accuse him before all the disciples; but as he had always taught his disciples to love, so now he only wished to soften the heart of Judas by love.

And, when he and his twelve were all seated at the table, Jesus took some bread, broke it into twelve pieces, and gave a piece to each of them, saying: "This is my body, take and eat it." And then he poured wine into a cup, and handed it to the disciples, saying: "Drink, all of you, out of this cup. It is my blood."

And when, one after another, they had drunk wine out of the cup, he said: "Yes, this is my blood, which I am shedding for the sins of the world." And having said this, Jesus rose from table, took off his outer garment, tied a towel round him, took a jug of water, and said that he would now wash the feet of all the disciples. He first came to Peter, but Peter moved away, saying: "Can a master wash his disciples' feet?" Jesus said: "It seems strange to you that I want to wash your feet, but you will soon know why I do it. I do it because, though you are pure, you are not all of you pure."

Jesus was thinking of Judas when he said this.

And Jesus washed the feet of all the disciples, including Judas. And when he had done it and had put on his garment, he spoke to all the disciples, and said:

"Do you know now, why I did this? I did it that you should always do it to each other. I, your Master, do it to show you how to behave to those who injure you. If you understand this, and will act so, it will be well with you always."

And having said this, Jesus became sad, and added: "Yes, yes! One of those whose feet I washed will betray me!"

The disciples looked at each other, and did not know whom he meant. And one of the disciples was sitting close to Jesus, and Simon Peter nodded to him, that he should ask Jesus whom he meant. He did so, and Jesus said; "It

is he to whom I shall give a piece of bread." And he gave a piece of bread to Judas Iscariot, and said to him, "What you want to do, do quickly!" At first no one understood what Jesus' words meant; but Judas understood them, and as soon as he had taken the piece of bread he rose and went out; and when the disciples understood what was happening, it was too late to try to catch him, for the night was dark.

And when Judas had gone, Jesus said: "Children, I shall not be with you long. Don't reason about my teaching, but, as I said to the Pharisees, do what I do. I give you one new commandment: as I have loved all of you to the end, so you also should always, and to the last, love one another and love all men. In this commandment lies my whole teaching. Only by keeping this commandment can you be my disciples. Love one another and love all men."

John XII, 42, 43; Matt. XXVI, 3-5; 14-28; John XIII, 2-35.

XI.III.

He also said to his disciples: "Life consists in coming nearer and nearer to the perfection of God. That is the way. I follow it, and you know the way."

Then Thomas said to him: "No, we do not know where you are going, and so we cannot know the way."

Jesus answered: "I am going to the Father, and my teaching is the way to Him. One cannot unite with the Father of life, except through my teaching. Fulfil my teaching about love, and you will know the Father."

Philip said: "Show us the Father."

And Jesus replied: "How is it you do not know the Father? My teaching is that I am in the Father, and the Father in me. He who lives by my teaching, and fulfils my

ve lat od id it iĪ

commandments, will know the laster of the control of worldly men will not see me, but my parts will not be a control you will live by it. And then you will under the control amin the Father, and the Father in me."

And Judas (not Iscariot), but another, asked (1964), will your spirit come only into us, and not into a line of

And Jesus said in reply: "The Father house on more fulfils my reaching, and my sport lives on him. But the Father does not live him who does not his my two or, and his spirit does not live in that man. My many of my own, but the Father's "

This is all tast tell you now how my port of your of truth will emen must you afterward and we have you all, and you will treet remember and understand must be I have told your fact when you under and it has a have peace must peace turn at world y temps to be so yet peace of the spent manyou will fear rement.

Why are you seem that are easing you have to be ing to the Father and from him I was reserved to the the spirit of truth and real enter soon read.

not source at my feath out to got to be an east of the maximum to the that is better for your .

...

that law you will be pushed to the work of a contract the your will take a contract the contract to the contract the father take you are contract to the contr

equal to me, if you do what I have taught you. I do not consider you as slaves, but as equal to myself, for I have explained to you all that I have understood from the Father, and you can do what I do. I have given you the only true teaching; and that teaching gives the only true welfare.

"The whole teaching is to love one another. Do not be surprised if the world hates you and persecutes you, for my teaching is hateful to the world. If you were at one with the world it would love you. But I have separated you from the world, and therefore it will hate and persecute you. If they persecute me, they will persecute you also. They cannot help doing it, for they do not know the Father. I told them who their Father is, but they would not listen to me. They have not understood my teaching, for they did not understand what I told them about the Father. And on that account they have hated me yet more.

"I should say much more to you, but it would be difficult for you to understand it now. But when the spirit of truth enters into you, it will show you the whole truth, for it will not tell you anything new or of its own, but it will tell you that which is from God, and will show you the way in all the events of your life. This spirit within you will tell you the very same that I tell you."

John XV, 7-26; XVI, 12-15.

XLV.

After that Jesus lifted his eyes to heaven, and said: "My Father, Thou hast given thy son the freedom of life, that he may receive true life. True life is to know the true God. And I have shown Thee to men. I have done what Thou hast ordered me to do. They were Thine before, but according to Thy will I have shown them the truth: that Thou art within them, and they have recognized Thee.

They have understood that all that is within me is within them also, and that it all comes from Thee. They have understood that all that is mine is Thine, and all that is Thine is mine. I am no longer of the world, but am going to Thee; but they are in the world, and therefore I pray Thee, Father, keep them in the truth! I do not pray that Thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that Thou shouldst deliver them from falsehood, and strengthen them in Thy truth; that they should all be one: as Thou art in me and I in Thee, that they also should be in us. That all should be united into one, and that men should understand that they were not born of their own will, but that Thou, loving them, hast sent them into the world, as Thou hast sent me.

"Righteous Father! the world does not yet know Thee, but I know Thee; and they have learnt to know Thee through me. And I have explained to them that Thou, loving them, hast given them life, that Thy love for them should return from them to Thee!" John XVII, 1-26.

XLVI.

Then Jesus rose, and went with his disciples on to the Mount of Olives. And on the way he said to them: "Yes, the time has come when, as is said in the Scriptures, the shepherd will be killed, and the sheep will be scattered. So it will be with you. I shall be taken, and you will run away."

"No, I will not run away," said Peter; "though everybody else ran away, I would never leave you. With you I am ready to go anywhere: to prison or to death!"

But Jesus said: "Do not boast beforehand of what you will do. It may be that to-night, before the cocks crow, you will deny me not once but three times."

"On no account," said Peter; and the other disciples said the same.

When they came to the Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus said to them: "Wait here a little while. I wish to pray." And he took with him only Peter and the two sons of Zebedee. And he said to them: "I am sorrowful. Stay with me."

And he went a little way from them, and lay on the ground, and began to pray, saying: "My Father! deliver me from what awaits me!" Then he was silent for a short time, and added: "But all the same, let not my will, but Thy will be done, and let it not be as I wish, but as Thou wishest!"

Then he rose, and went to his disciples. But they had fallen asleep; and Jesus awoke them, and said: "Be strong in spirit. Only the spirit is strong, the flesh is weak."

And again Jesus went aside, and again he began to pray, and said: "My Father! Thy will be done; not my will, but Thine!"

And having said that, he returned to the disciples and saw that they were again asleep. And he went from them a third time, and again said: "My Father! not my will, but Thine be done!"

Then he returned to the disciples and said to them: "Come now, I am going to give myself up into the hands of the worldly."

Matt. XXVI, 30-46.

XLVII.

And just when he had said this Judas Iscariot appeared, and with him soldiers and servants of the High Priests with arms and lights. And Judas at once came up to Jesus, and greeted him and kissed him.

And Jesus said to him: "Friend, why have you come?" Then the guards surrounded Jesus and wished to seize

him. But Peter snatched a sword from the High Priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. And seeing this, Jesus said to Peter: "Put the sword back into its scabbard. All who take the sword will perish by the sword."

After that Jesus turned to the people who had come for him, and said: "Why have you come for me with weapons, as for a robber? Have I not been among you in the Temple every day, teaching you—why did you not take me then?"

Then the officer told the soldiers to bind Jesus. And the soldiers bound him, and led him first to Caiaphas. This was the same Caiaphas who, by saying that it was better that one man should perish than the whole nation should do so, had persuaded the Pharisees to destroy Jesus. And Jesus was brought into the courtyard of the house.

The disciples of Jesus all ran away. Only one of them, Peter, followed Jesus from afar, and looked to see where they led him.

When Jesus was brought into the High Priest's yard, Peter also entered, to see what would happen. And a woman in the yard saw him, and asked: "Were you also with Jesus of Galilee?" And Peter was frightened; and, so as not to be accused with Jesus, said: "I don't know what you are talking about."

Then, when Jesus was taken into the house, Peter, with the rest of the people, entered the porch. There a fire was burning, and another woman was warming herself at it. When Peter came near the fire, this woman looked at him and said: "I think this man was with Jesus of Nazareth." And Peter was still more frightened, and began to swear that he had never been with Jesus, and did not know anything about him.

A little later some other people drew near to Peter

and said: "All the same, one sees that you are one of the rioters. Your speech shows that you are from Galilee." Then Peter again swore that he had never even seen Jesus. And hardly had he said this, when a cock crowed, and Peter remembered the words of Jesus: "Before the cocks crow to-night you will perhaps have denied me not once, but three times." Peter remembered this, and went out of the yard and wept bitterly.

Matt. XXVI, 47-58; John XVIII, 12-14; Matt. XXVI, 69-75.

XLVIII.

The Elders and the Scribes collected at the High Priest's house. And when they had all assembled, Jesus was brought in, and the High Priest asked him what he taught, and who his disciples were.

Jesus answered: "I have always spoken openly before everybody, and I never hid anything. Why do you ask me? Ask those who heard and understood my teaching. They will tell you."

When Jesus said this, one of the High Priest's servants hit him in the face, and said: "Who are you talking to? Does one answer the High Priest in such a way?"

Jesus said: "If I have answered badly, tell me what was wrong. But if I have not answered badly, why do you strike me?"

The High Priest and the Elders tried to convict Jesus, but could find no evidence that condemned him. At last they hunted up two false witnesses, and these witnesses said that Jesus had declared that he could destroy the Temple and build it up again in three days. The High Priest asked Jesus: "What do you say to this?" But Jesus did not answer. Then the High Priest said to him: "Say, then,

are you the Christ, the Son of God?" And Jesus answered: "Yes, I am a son of God."

Then the High Priest cried: "You blaspheme against God! What other proofs do we need? You have all heard how he blasphemes!" And the High Priest addressed the meeting, saying: "Now you have yourselves heard how he blasphemes against God! To what do you condemn him for that?"

And they all answered: "To death!"

Then all the people and the guards set upon Jesus, and began to spit in his face, and to hit him on the cheek. They closed his eyes, struck him, and asked: "Now then, you Son of God! Guess who struck you." But Jesus remained silent.

Mark XIV, 53; John XVIII, 19-23;

Matt. XXVI, 59-68.

XLIX.

After this Jesus was led, bound, to the Roman Governor, Pontius Pilate. When they had brought him before Pilate, the latter came out into the porch and said to those who had brought him: "What do you accuse this man of?" And they answered: "He is an evil-doer; that is why we have brought him."

Pilate answered: "If you consider him an evil-doer, judge him yourselves, by your own laws." But they said: "We have brought him to you, that you should execute him; for we are not allowed to put any one to death."

Then Pilate asked them again, what they accused Jesus of. They said: "He stirs up the people, and forbids them to pay taxes to Cæsar, and calls himself the King of the Jews."

Pilate listened to them, and ordered Jesus to be brought to his Court.

When Jesus came before him, Pilate asked:

"Are you the King of the Jews?" Jesus answered, "Are you asking me this of yourself, or are you repeating what others have told you?"

Pilate replied: "I am not a Jew! Your own people have brought you before me, because you call yourself King."

Jesus said: "Yes, I am a king: but my kingdom is not of earth. If I were an earthly king, my subjects would fight for me, and would not have given me up into the hands of the Jews. But you see what they have done to me! My kingdom is not of earth."

Then Pilate asked: "You still consider yourself a king?",

Jesus said: "I teach the people the truth about the Kingdom of Heaven. And he who lives by the truth, is a king."

Pilate said: "Truth? What is truth?"

And Pilate turned his back to Jesus, and went out to the Jews, and said to them: "I don't think that this man has done anything wrong; nor is there anything to put him to death for."

But the High Priests insisted, saying that he did much evil, and stirred up the people, and had aroused the whole of Judæa.

Then Pilate, in the presence of the High Priests, again questioned Jesus, and said to him: "You see how they accuse you? Why do you not defend yourself?" But Jesus remained silent, and did not say another word; so that Pilate was surprised at him.

Then Pilate remembered that Galilee was under King Herod, and asked: "Is he not from Galilee?" They replied that he was. Then Pilate said: "If he is from Galilee, he

is in the power of Herod." And to get rid of the Jews, Pilate sent Jesus to Herod.

John XVIII, 28-38; Luke XXIII, 2-7; Mark XV, 3-5.

L.

And Jesus was taken to Herod. And Herod had heard much about Jesus, and was glad to see him. Herod had Jesus brought before him, and began questioning him about several things; but Jesus did not reply. And before Herod, the High Priests and the Scribes accused Jesus of many things, as they had done before Pilate, and said that he was a rebel. But Herod considered Jesus to be an empty fellow, and to make him look ridiculous, gave orders to put a red mantle on him; and in this fool's dress, sent him back to Pilate.

When he was brought to Pilate the second time, Pilate again called the rulers of the Jews, and said to them: "You brought this man before me, as one who rouses the people to revolt, and I have examined him before you, and do not find that he has been a rebel. I sent him with you to Herod, and as you see, there too, nothing serious has been found against him. So I think that he should not be executed, but should be flogged and then set free."

But when they heard this, they all shouted: "No! Put him to death in the Roman way. . . . Nail him to a cross!"

Pilate heard them, and said: "Very well. But it is an old custom that one criminal should be pardoned at Passover. There is a robber, Barabbas, who has been condemned to death, and there is this man. One of the two can be set free. Who shall it be—Jesus, or Barabbas?"

Pilate wished to save Jesus; but the High Priests persuaded the people, and they all shouted: "Barabbas! Barabbas!"

Then Pilate asked: "And what is to be done with Jesus?" And again they all shouted: 'Crucify him in the Roman way!"

But Pilate still did not wish to execute Jesus, and again began trying to persuade the High Priests to let Jesus go. He said: "Why are you set against him? He has done no evil; and there is no reason to execute him."

But the High Priests and their servants again shouted: "Crucify him! Crucify him in the Roman way! Crucify him! Crucify him!"

Then Pilate said: "If so, then take him and crucify him yourselves, for I find no fault in him."

And the High Priests said: "We demand what is lawful. By the law he should be crucified, for calling himself the 'Son of God.'"

Then Pilate was puzzled, because he did not know what "Son of God" meant.

And he went back into the Court, and again called Jesus and asked him: "Whence are you? Who are you, and where do you come from?" But Jesus did not answer. Pilate said: "Why do you not answer me? Do you know that you are in my power; and that I can crucify you or set you free?"

Then Jesus answered: "No, you have no power over me. Power comes only from above."

Luke XXIII, 8-16; Matt. XXVII, 15-23; John XIX, 6-11.

LI.

Pilate so wished to set Jesus free that he again spoke to the people, and said: "How is it that you want to crucify your 'king'?"

But the Jews answered: "If you set Jesus free, you will



THE PATHWAY OF LIFE

show that you are not a faithful servant of Cæsar, because he who makes himself king is Cæsar's enemy. We have one Cæsar; so crucify this 'king'!"

When Pilate heard these words he saw that he must crucify Jesus. Then Pilate came out to the Jews, poured water on his hands, and said: "I wash my hands of the blood of this innocent man."

And the people cried: "Let his blood be on us and on our children!"

Then Pilate ordered Jesus to be beaten. And when the soldiers had beaten him, they put a crown on his head, and a stick in his hand, and threw the red mantle over his shoulders and began to mock him. They bowed before him, saying: "Rejoice, King of the Jews!" And they struck him on the cheek, and on the head, and spat in his face. And they all shouted: "Crucify him! Our king is Cæsar.... Crucify him!"

And after that Pilate ordered Jesus to be crucified. Then they took off the red mantle and put his own clothes on him, and made him carry the cross to the place of execution, called Golgotha, that he might be crucified there. And they nailed him to the cross, and two other men with him; one at each side of him, and Jesus in the middle.

And Jesus said: "Father! forgive them, for they know not what they do!"

John XIX, 12-18; Matt. XXVII, 24-31; Luke XXIII, 34.

LII.

And when Jesus was hanging on the cross the people surrounded him and abused him. Some came up to him, nodding their heads at him, and saying: "There now! You wished to destroy the Temple of Jerusalem and build it

up again in three days. Well now! Save yourself—come down from the cross!"

And the High Priests and Scribes stood there and also laughed at him, saying: "He saved others, but cannot save himself! Show now that you are the Christ. Come down from the cross and then we will believe you! He said he was the Son of God, and that God would not forsake him. . . . Why has God now forsaken him?"

And the people and the High Priests and the soldiers all abused him.

And one of the robbers who were crucified beside him also said: "If you are the Christ, save yourself and us!" But the other robber, hearing this, said: "You do not fear God. You are yourself hanging on a cross for your evil deeds, yet you abuse an innocent man. You and I are crucified for a reason: but this man has done nothing bad."

At the ninth hour Jesus said loudly: "Eli, Eli, lama sabacthani!"—which means "My God, my God, why hast Thou forsaken me?"

And when the people heard it, they laughed and said: "He is calling Elias the prophet. Let us see if Elias will come!"

Afterwards Jesus said: "Give me something to drink!"

And a man took a sponge and soaked it in vinegar, and held it up on a reed to Jesus. Jesus sucked the sponge, and then said in a loud voice: "It is finished! Father, into Thy hands I yield my spirit!" Then his head drooped and he died.

Matt. XXVII, 39-44; Luke XXIII, 39-41;

Matt. XXVII, 46-9; John XIX, 28-30.

NOV 1 1919



•

*



i

. .

